Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2008 with funding from
Microsoft Corporation

http://www.archive.org/details/evidenceforcommu00hude

THE EVIDENCE FOR COMMUNICATION WITH THE DEAD

Demy 8vo. Cloth 8/6 net.

THE NEWER SPIRITUALISM

By Frank Podmore.

"Sums up the results of his prolonged inquires on the subject of spiritualism. . . . Mr. Podmore, at any rate, seems to have summed up the existing evidence in the most critical, and at the same time, open-handed manner."—*Daily News.*

"Here Mr. Podmore is at his best: sane, clear, and wonderfully acute."—*Morning Leader.*

"We are greatly indebted to Mr. Podmore for this clear, critical, and dispassionate survey of the whole question."—*Inquirer.*

LONDON:
T. FISHER UNWIN

THE EVIDENCE FOR COMMUNICATION WITH THE DEAD

BY
MRS. ANNA HUDE, PH.D.

T. FISHER UNWIN
LONDON: ADELPHI TERRACE
LEIPSIC: INSELSTRASSE 20

First published in 1913.

[*All rights reserved.*]

The quotations in this book from the *Proceedings of the Society for Psychical Research* are made by permission, but it is of course to be understood that for all interpretations and discussion of matter borrowed from the *Proceedings*—that is, for everything beyond the actual quotations—the author alone is responsible.

To the above statement I want to add my warmest thanks to the leaders of the Society. If I have been obliged to disagree with some of their opinions, this fact has not diminished my deep esteem for their great and noble work.

No less do I desire to thank the leader of the American Society for Psychical Research, Professor James Hyslop, who is indeed, as he has been called, the apostolic successor of that prominent researcher and untiring worker, Dr. Richard Hodgson, whose name will appear very often in the following pages.

A. H.

CONTENTS

SECTION I

The Supernormal Powers of Man

CHAP.		PAGE
I.	THE ARGUMENT OF PROFESSOR FLOURNOY	1
II.	TELEPATHY	16
III.	CLAIRVOYANCE	30

SECTION II

The Automatic Writing of Mrs. Verrall

IV.	INTRODUCTION. DR. VERRALL'S EXPERIMENT	46
V.	THE SYMPOSIUM INCIDENT	59
VI.	CROSS-CORRESPONDENCES WITH MRS. FORBES	74
VII.	PSYCHOMETRY AND PREVISION	85
VIII.	CROSS-CORRESPONDENCES WITH MRS. PIPER	95

SECTION III

The Automatic Writing of Mrs. Holland

IX.	SPONTANEOUS WRITING.	101
X.	THE BEGINNING OF EXPERIMENTS	124
XI.	CROSS-CORRESPONDENCES	146

SECTION IV

The Mediumism of Mrs. Piper. I. The Phinuit Period

XII.	PHINUIT	172
XIII.	GEORGE PELHAM	199

SECTION V

The Mediumism of Mrs. Piper. II. The New Régime

CHAP.		PAGE
XIV.	THE HYSLOP SITTINGS	223
XV.	THE JUNOT SITTINGS	251
XVI.	THE HODGSON-CONTROL	267

SECTION VI

The Mediumism of Mrs. Piper. III. Experiments

XVII.	CROSS-CORRESPONDENCES	274
XVIII.	OTHER EXPERIMENTS	311

SECTION VII

Conclusion. New Mediums

XIX.	CONCLUSION	333
XX.	NEW MEDIUMS	341

INDEX 349

The Evidence for Communication with the Dead.

SECTION I

The Supernormal Powers of Man

CHAPTER I

THE ARGUMENT OF PROFESSOR FLOURNOY

With regard to the problem which is the subject of the present book, the world of to-day stands divided into two sharply defined factions. There are those who feel convinced that a communication with the dead exists, and those who—if they have given a thought to the matter at all—consider it all but insane to assume such a communication. The former group consists of the believing spiritualists, who without much criticism accept most things that purport to be messages from the departed; but it includes withal men and women who regard psychical research as a science, and cultivate it in a scientific manner. Of the latter and much larger group, it may on the whole be said that its members know little or nothing about the question; as a rule, those who have occupied themselves with it have left the standpoint described above. After a thorough and honest study of the subject, only a very few have maintained their original opinion.

Among these few is M. Theodore Flournoy, Professor of Psychology at the University of Geneva, perhaps the

most important adversary of the spiritistic conclusion. His scientific training, his eloquent language, and his conspicuous fairness in discussion, combine to make his treatment of the problem very valuable ; his works have justly gained a world-wide reputation, and no psychical student can omit paying attention to them. I propose, therefore, to commence my investigation of the question with a review of his results.

Professor Flournoy's great merit is above all to have, with respect to a large category of mediumistic communications, made out in a clear and convincing manner that the source from which they proceed is to be found in the medium's own self. Imagination, that power to create figures and make up stories which all of us possess in a degree, and which in the partially or entirely entranced medium may assume vast proportions, is one factor ; cryptomnesia, that emergence of forgotten memories which we know from our dream-life, the other. In the opinion of Professor Flournoy, they together explain so completely the mediumistic utterances, that at any rate with regard to those mediums whom he has himself studied, nothing remains in support of other theories.

For this assertion, Professor Flournoy has produced interesting evidence in his famous book *From India to the Planet Mars ;* afterwards he has in the work *Spirits and Mediums* [1] in divers ways strengthened the proof. What the subconscious imagination of the medium Helen Smith (pseudonym) was capable of inventing is already shown in the title of the former book, which is consecrated solely to her. It made her believe herself to be a reincarnation, now of the queen of France, Marie Antoinette, now of an Indian princess from the fifteenth century ; it transported her to the planet Mars, and made her give detailed descriptions, nay drawings, of the wonderful things she saw there, and the human beings she met with. For the planetarians resembled, strange to tell, the inhabitants of

[1] *Esprits et Médiums*, translated into English by Hereward Carrington under the title of *Spiritism and Psychology*.

this earth, and their language, of which she furnished many examples, certainly consisted of odd words, but its construction corresponded most accurately to the construction of her own mother-tongue, French. The Martian vocables translated one by one the French words. Monsieur, Madame and Mademoiselle, were called *métiche*, *médache*, and *métaganiche*, and so on. The similitude was so great that even the connecting *t* had its equivalent —also when it was quite superfluous.

In a romance like this, it was not very difficult to recognize a purely subliminal product, even if it required a scientific mind like Professor Flournoy's to trace it back to its source, and make clear the process that had produced it. In *Spirits and Mediums*, however, the author has got to deal with communications of a more ordinary type, and in no wise does he disregard the difficulty of furnishing an absolutely satisfactory proof of their origin. It is, in fact, not only necessary to show that their contents may have been derived from the medium, but that they cannot have come from any other source. It is true that their banality is often so great that all doubt must disappear. For instance, on the occasion of the coming to Geneva of a famous spiritualist, the great reformer Calvin introduced himself with the following tirade :

" Yes, it is indeed the reformer of Geneva who is here. I am pierced with pain at seeing what has become of the Huguenot faith among the greater portion of my fellow-citizens. But I see help coming, and I beseech you to seize it. It is clericalism that has corrupted the masses, it is for the spiritualists to repair the evil ! It is no easy thing, I know, to transform suddenly the foundations of moral and religious life ; but even if one's whole life must be devoted to it, and all dreamed of happiness must be sacrificed, it is the duty of all believers to make the light penetrate as far as possible."

In the same manner it fared with the contemporary celebrities of Geneva, when they departed this life. They invariably came into new existence through the trance-performances of one or more mediums, but always,

Professor Flournoy states, these manifestations corresponded to the medium's idea of the deceased persons, and not to the image which he himself had of their personality. With crude colours was depicted the famous corypheus of materialism, Carl Vogt, arriving to tell of his death and his surprise at being still alive.

"What! Vogt, the sceptic who had believed himself to be brain and nerves only! And he lives, he thinks, he acts, without the instrumentality of these things! Woe, woe to me! To believe oneself competent in such a matter and to have deceived oneself so grossly! My poor head will jump off!"

And when shortly afterwards the old physiologist Schiff, who when Professor Flournoy saw him in his laboratory was always original, piquant, and full of philosophical ideas, manifested through the same medium, his speech consisted only of platitudes, after the style of Vogt.

Here, then, the contents of the communications speak for themselves, because the incongruity between the alleged communicators and the utterances ascribed to them is too evident. But of course there are cases where this criterion fails. Professor Flournoy, however, contends that when, with regard to a number of typical "messages," he can show the impossibility of their emanating from any other source than the medium, he must be right in maintaining this simple explanation also where their origin is less clear. He reproduces, therefore, with special satisfaction, a series of messages which cannot be assigned to the apparent communicator because this person is still alive. A most characteristic case is that of Mme. Dupond, a learned and highly educated lady, who at the age of forty-five became interested in spiritism. She read Allan Kardec, etc., and tried automatic writing with some success. She had a friend, M. Rodolphe, a young Frenchman, who to her great regret had recently entered into a religious order in Italy. A few days after

she had obtained her first script, on April 24th, 1881, her hand wrote as follows :

"I am Rodolphe ; I died at 11 o'clock last night, on April 23rd. You must believe what I tell you. I am happy, I have ended my troubles. I have been sick for some days, and I could not write. I had a hæmorrhage of the lungs, caused by a cold, which came suddenly. I died without suffering, and I have thought much of you. I have left orders as to your letters. I died at X., far from dom Bruno . . . Your father brought me to you ; I did not know we could communicate thus ; it makes me very happy . . . A little before my death I called the director of the Oratory to me ; gave him your letters, begging him to return them to you ; he will do so. After communion I begged to see my colleagues, and said good-bye to them ; I was peaceful ; I did not suffer ; but life gradually became extinct. The passage of death resembled that of sleep. I awakened near God, near parents and friends ; it was beautiful, wonderful ; I was happy and free. I have thought at once of those who loved me, and I should have liked to speak to them, but I can only communicate with you. I remain with you, and I see you, but I only notice your spirit . . . I am devoted to you. Do not fear that I love you less because I am no longer on earth ; it is the reverse. I am in space, I see your parents, and I love them also. Adieu ; I am going to pray for you . . . I am no longer Catholic ; I am Christian."

This first message was followed by others—until Mme. Dupond, on April 30th, received a letter from Rodolphe who, far from being dead, was in perfect health.

Professor Flournoy has with much fineness unravelled the causes of Mme. Dupond's subliminal romance about her young friend. She had met him in Italy, where he was passing the winter on account of his health. They had talked together about spiritual subjects, and Mme. Dupond, who was a Protestant, had wanted to convert him to her own faith ; but instead of this she found that the influence exercised over him by an Italian preacher, the Father dom Bruno, prevailed over her own, and that he became associated with a religious order under the direction of this father. Now she expected a letter from him ; it did not arrive, and a sudden fall in the temperature that followed a warm spell of spring might well make

her fear for him whose health was so delicate. Such is the background of her romance about his death ; perhaps, in the depth of her soul she would have preferred to know him dead rather than living with dom Bruno ; the remark that he died far from this prelate suggests such a feeling. His death made everything right ; he was happy and loved her even more than before ; he was no longer Catholic, he was Christian. There is, in fact, as regards the substance, not much difference between Mme. Dupond's automatic production and those day-dreams which many people dream awake, though of course the process is more alike to real dreaming.

Two other cases were communicated to Professor Flournoy by the medium Mme. Zora. One referred to a very old lady, Adrienne B., whom she had known in the small town of Delemont, where she had resided at the time before her marriage, and celebrated her wedding. Mme. Zora's husband had gone to live in the tropics, and the anxious wife had received, through another psychic, a message which stated that he was dead. Probably, then, her thoughts often went back to Delemont, and to that period when she used to see Adrienne B. ; this lady was at that time, sixteen years before, eighty years of age ; thus it was natural that Mme. Zora more or less consciously believed her to be no longer among the living.

Under these circumstances she one day automatically wrote as follows :

" My very dear friend, for the first time I come to visit you ; I shall be glad to talk with you if you will permit me to do so. You have not yet recognized me, which surprises me ; it is not so many years since I saw you, and you were very amiable and full of reminiscences. It is eleven years since you paid me a visit, and you have not been at Delemont since, so I have not had the pleasure of speaking to you for a long time. It is already some time since I passed away, and it is only to-day that I learn that you are permitted to keep up the relationship with this side of the grave ; I am very glad that you enjoy this privilege, you deserve it, and I am also glad for my own sake. You will tell me if you too have kept the memory of our good little moments in the Rue du Midi, and of the last visit

I paid you at Moutiers ; it is already long ago, it was in 1871. I believe that I remember rightly though it is not easy here, nor yet on account of my great age——[1] Good-bye, my dear friend, it will be a pleasure to me to return some time. Your old friend—Adrienne B."

Though Mme. Adrienne B. was at this time ninety-six years of age, she did not die until two months after the production of Mme. Zora's script. The latter was at Delemont the day after her death and was told about it. Without this coincidence she would have continued to regard the old lady as the author of the script. This being impossible, she believed that a deceiving spirit had made use of her hand. That such a one should be cognizant of the petty details upon which the message is based, and which were all to be found in her own memory, does not seem to have caused her any astonishment.

In the second case sent by Mme. Zora the cause of the " message " was very evident. The automatist knew that the alleged communicator, Mme. Leblanc, was dying, and it was a lady whom she had very earnestly tried to convert to spiritism, without success. While her mind was filled with sad thoughts about her, one morning she was seized with a strong desire to write. She took a pencil, which immediately wrote the following lines :

" Yes, I am she of whom you thought. You were right. You spoke truly. I did not dare to believe it, and behold, I am here ! Glory be to our Father whom you love and whom you glorify in your soul and in these pages . . . Yes, I am here, happy to be so, to tell you that in spite of my great desire to believe it, I had to experience it myself—to touch with the finger, to put my hand in the side. I have not forgotten our first meeting, and I have come to say ' Amen ' with you to all the desires of your hearts, to all your experiences . . . A. L."

Evidently the script represents the feelings which the medium must imagine to be those of her sceptical friend when she learned after death that spiritism had told the truth, and no particle more. And yet Mme. Zora, when it

[1] Omissions by the present author are indicated by dashes ; otherwise by dots.

was ascertained that Mme. Leblanc had lived forty-eight hours after the production of the message, could not be persuaded to accept the theory of Professor Flournoy ; she does not in this case seem to have felt certain that a deceiving spirit had amused itself at her cost, but she preferred to remain without explanation rather than believe that she herself had been the unconscious author of the communication.

In spite of their triteness I have given these " messages " all but unabridged, because longwindedness is one of their chief characteristics. In all of them, however, the subconscious mind had shown a faculty of composing which had at least imposed upon the waking sensitive. And yet we have only reached the first stage of its capability. We have as yet encountered nothing but pure construction, founded upon details which the mediums knew normally ; we have found no knowledge which they could not recognize, and, therefore, with some reason must ascribe to external beings. The next stage is the one where such a knowledge supervenes ; a knowledge, however, which on closer examination turns out to be, nevertheless, that of the mediums themselves, though it has been so completely lost by their waking consciousness that they generally do not even recollect it when reminded of it. We meet here the phenomenon called cryptomnesia, hidden memory—that is, a memory which exists only in the subconsciousness, and can only through automatic speech or script, and the like, be made accessible for other people and for the normal medium.

It is, as accentuated by Professor Flournoy, of course extremely difficult to prove this purely subjective origin of the mediumistic communications when they refer to matters whose connection with the medium is hidden or improbable. It is necessary to know the individuality of the mediums, their past, their family, their acquaintances, their reading and other occupations, in order to be able to judge in some measure of " the contents of their bag."

Therefore Professor Flournoy has himself preferred to confine his studies to the psychics living in Geneva, whose relations he might have some hope of unravelling. And here, as with regard to pure fabrication, he insists on his right to apply the results of a few thoroughly analyzed cases to the many similar ones which, on account of the circumstances, it is less easy to dissect.

It is more specially in the book *From India to the Planet Mars* that he has given us the result of a few analyses of this kind. An interesting instance is his demonstration of the origin of Helen Smith's statements about certain deceased members of his own family. The medium was in a semi-trance, communicating what she saw or heard partly orally, partly by means of table-tippings. As a typical case Professor Flournoy reports his very first sitting with her, in 1894; at the time it caused him great astonishment, as it was inconceivable to him how she could be cognizant of things which had occurred even before his own birth. His record is, slightly abridged, as follows:

> The medium describes that she sees two women, rather handsome, dark, both of them in wedding-dress. "This refers to you, M. Flournoy," she exclaims. They wear white flowers in their hair, which is black; they have dark eyes. There is a certain resemblance between them. One of them appears in two forms, in one she is young, about twenty-five years of age, and dressed as described; in the other radiant, far away [*i.e.*, dead], surrounded by a number of handsome children, happy. The two women are going to be married. The medium hears a name: "An . . An . . Dan . . Ran . . Dandi . . Dandiran!" Professor Flournoy asks to whom of the two women the name refers. Answer: To her who had two forms. The medium does not see the other so clearly, but suddenly discerns a big man by her side. And the table dictates: "I am her sister. We will return."

All this, Professor Flournoy says, is founded on the fact that his mother and her sister were married on the same day, in 1853, and that the latter, Mme. Dandiran, died young and childless. The description "a big man" fits his father. In five more sittings with Professor

Flournoy, Helen Smith produced information concerning his mother's family; beyond that, however, her knowledge did not seem to reach. This for one thing is a proof of her honesty; she might easily have informed herself of his father's or his wife's family relations. Moreover, the case presented the peculiarity that the medium, after the first six sittings, never once in the course of five years during which Professor Flournoy attended her seances reverted to these circumstances. It was as if her first contact with the new sitter had called latent memories to the surface, and the subliminal "bag" had at once exhausted its supply. Everything suggested that the medium had at some time learned something about his mother's family, the Claparèdes, and at last he succeeded in elucidating the matter. On application to the former husband of his long since departed aunt, Professor Dandiran, at Lausanne, who was the one living member of that generation of Professor Flournoy's family, he obtained the following information:

"I recollect that my mother and aunt, especially the latter, were much interested in a young woman of that name [Smith] whom they had already known and employed as a seamstress before her marriage —— I also believe that their interest in the young woman made them introduce her to the Claparèdes——."

Not until he had received this answer, Professor Flournoy addressed himself to Helen Smith's mother, who was most willing to reply to his questions about her relation to his mother and aunt. Helen herself did not remember to have ever heard anything about them. All her statements, however, referred to two separate periods in which the intercourse had taken place, before and after the marriage of Mme. Smith, and were of a nature to make it easily conceivable that they belonged to stories which the mother might have told her child. It must, therefore, be admitted that Professor Flournoy has proved that this was the source of the medium's knowledge. That she did not recollect anything about it is only one of many

instances of the subconsciously remembered things being often those that are most thoroughly forgotten by the normal self.

Likewise, Professor Flournoy found invariably that the information given about deceased persons in Helen Smith's trance referred to external things which might easily be reported ; in a small town like Geneva, she must doubtless have been told many stories about people without consciously remembering them. Moreover, in at least two cases besides his own, Helen's mother was proved to be the source.

Under these circumstances, Professor Flournoy feels justified in asserting that cryptomnesia alone suffices to explain the knowledge of this medium. But of course it was not always possible to obtain the proof of such being the case. In the Indian romance, for instance, the source seemed certain, but the medium's connection with it was unprovable. Mlle. Smith purported to be the reincarnation of the princess Simandini, the wife of the jealous prince Sivrouka Nayaka, living in the palace Tchandraguiri in Kanara in India, in the year 1401. Professor Flournoy—who, moreover, was alleged to be the reincarnation of Sivrouka Nayaka—was of course very eager to learn whether this prince had really existed, and what was on the whole the foundation of Helen's story. But he applied in vain to various historians for a confirmation of her statements ; they did not know Sivrouka Nayaka. Great, therefore, was his excitement when one day in the library of Geneva on turning over the leaves of M. de Marlès' voluminous *Histoire de l'Inde*, a work published in 1828, he found the following passage :

" Kanara and the adjoining provinces next to Delhi may be regarded as the Georgia of Hindostan. There the most beautiful women are said to dwell ; also the inhabitants are very jealous ; they scarcely permit them to be seen by strangers.

" Tchandraguiri, whose name means Mountain of the Moon, is a vast fortress constructed in 1401 by the Rajah Sivrouka-Nayaca."

It turned out, however, that this discovery did not secure the existence of the prince. The historians agreed in declaring that the work of Marlès was worthless, and the statement about Sivrouka and his fortress pure fiction. Nay, Marlès himself only mentioned them in his geographical description of India; in a later volume where he deals with the history of the period 1200—1600, they do not figure.

Such being the case, it seems impossible to doubt that Helen Smith has made their acquaintance direct or indirect through Marlès' work; the naming of a precise year within the Christian era is in itself indicative of literary origin; and that the whole of it is incorrect, not in accordance with fact, of course points decisively to this very book. But Helen Smith's connection with the old and rare work was in itself most improbable, and not even a sagacity like Professor Flournoy's was capable of discovering it.

Where Professor Flournoy sums up his estimation of mediumistic performances, he strongly accentuates their silliness or, as he more often prefers to call it, their puerility. "The most striking thing in all these mediumistic imaginings," he writes, "is their childish and terribly foolish character. The medium no longer seems to be the mature and serious person whom we knew in normal life, but an inferior, degenerate personality, as if the mediumistic state involved a spiritual deterioration, a sort of relapse to a former level." "Everything forces us to assume that the mind of the medium when producing the messages is in a state of infantile regression." As an illustration hereof, he mentions that Mlle. X., the medium through whom Calvin manifested, was a lady of high culture, the authoress of philosophical and moral writings; if in her normal state she had proposed to compose an essay on the ideas of the reformer, she doubtless would not have made him express himself in the trivial and insipid manner that characterizes her auto-

matic product. Helen Smith, too, is described by Professor Flournoy as a most intelligent woman. That her romances are childish will be clear to all readers of *From India to the Planet Mars.* Very infantile also is her fabrication of the Martian language; to make a new language is in itself a feat which probably many people will own to have tried to accomplish in their childhood. A special want of intelligence was displayed by the entranced Mlle. Smith when Professor Flournoy had pointed out to her normal self that the equivalent for the connecting *t* in the sentence *reviendra-t-il* was quite superfluous in the Martian translation *bérimir m hed;* a week later the French words *trouve-t-on* were rendered by *bindié idé*—without the connecting consonant, though in this case it would have been anything but superfluous. Her subconscious mind had entirely missed the point of the professor's criticism.

Until now we have only discussed the mediums whom Professor Flournoy had made the objects of his personal study. With regard to those who constitute the chief material for the research of the Psychical Society in England, his views are different. Their performances he does not think can be explained as a mixture of imagination and cryptomnesia only; he sets up as a third cause, *telepathy,* which furnishes the mediums with a knowledge that is not to be found in their own mind.

With telepathy we have reached the supernormal powers of man; the faculty of speaking or writing automatically, cryptomnesia, etc., no doubt are not normal qualities, but they do not rank as supernormal. Professor Flournoy, however, accentuates that he does not use the term telepathy as an explanatory hypothesis, but simply to design "the fact that a great many automatic communications which are astonishing as coming from the medium cease to be so when the sitters are reckoned with as factors." There are mediums who draw not only from their own forgotten memories, but from the knowledge of

the persons present. How it is done, Professor Flournoy will not attempt to investigate ; he contents himself with stating as an " empirical law " that telepathy takes place. The group of memories which a sitter carries with him of a dead person may emerge through the medium who did not know that person ; " they are telepathically reflected in the subconsciousness of the medium as in a living mirror, and he immediately translates into words and gestures this borrowed image, no doubt striking in its resemblance, but one in which the defunct has not the slightest share."

In the case, however, of the most famous among the English-speaking mediums, Mrs. Piper, the theory of telepathy from the present persons became insufficient. " Doubtless," Professor Flournoy writes, " many of these striking cases can be explained by mental transmission, the medium having only sent back to the sitters the picture of the discarnate which they themselves carried in their thoughts. But there are more complex facts, in which it is necessary to admit an active and selective telepathy, by the aid of which the hypnoid imagination of Mrs. Piper can choose from the minds of many living—present or absent—memories concerning only the dead person in question, and reunite them in such a way as to reconstruct a completer image than any of the partial images which were left in any of the various persons of his acquaintance."

Professor Flournoy admits that it is difficult to explain this power of choice. He points at the possibility that " the incomplete image of the defunct which one of the sitters has transmitted telepathically to Mrs. Piper may attract to itself, by some obscure psychological affinity, other fragmentary images dispersed among other persons," and that all these by becoming fused in her subconsciousness may " give birth to reconstructions of an exact and recognizable nature."

It is, then, through a wide-ranging assumption of supernormal human powers that Professor Flournoy arrives at

his final conclusion which he lays down in his preface to *Spirits and Mediums* when he writes :

" As for the supernormal incidents which are so often intermixed with mediumistic phenomena, and which spiritism interprets as implying the intervention of extra-terrestrial intelligences, —— they denote, in truth, a veritable realm of forces or of laws still mysterious, but a realm in which the participation of the discarnate has not as yet been adequately proved. Certainly it would be rash, *a priori*, to exclude its possibility. But as there are a number of cases where supernormal phenomena (telepathy, clairvoyance, etc.) occur which obviously are not due to the departed, but to spontaneous and natural faculties of the living in certain special states of their personality, it is logical to suppose—provisionally, at least, and until proof to the contrary be forthcoming—that it is the same in cases where the circumstances are more obscure."

CHAPTER II

TELEPATHY

In the preceding chapter we have heard Professor Flournoy assert that imagination and cryptomnesia were the sole sources of a large number of mediumistic communications. With regard to the remaining part, he referred to the supernormal powers of man as a fact which seemed to make superfluous the assumption of the participation of the dead.

With a certain force the same opinion has been set forth by the German philosopher, Eduard von Hartmann,[1] whose name is often mentioned by psychical researchers. It is by means of telepathy, psychometry, and clairvoyance, he argues, that the contents of the spiritistic messages are obtained, which give them the appearance of originating from the departed. Where the line is to be drawn between the said phenomena is less certain, but relatively of small importance ; clairvoyance exists at any rate in the shape of prevision, as the perception of what has not yet occurred cannot be due to the reading of other people's thoughts.

Hartmann has made his argument against spiritism famous by connecting it with his doctrine of a world-soul, or central mind, in which all individual minds have their root. Through it they can get into communication with each other as over the telephone [2]—a simile he has no hesitation in using—and from it they can draw, not only the particulars of the present world-state in distant

[1] See his two books: *Spiritism* (Der Spiritismus) and *The Spirit Theory* (Die Geisterhypothese).

[2] This explanation, however, is only applied to telepathy in its true sense of mental intercourse at a distance ; thought-transference at close quarters Hartmann ascribes to ether vibrations.

places, but also the particulars of future events. For in the central or absolute mind the threads of all casual series meet in one single all-seeing; its omniscience embraces implicitly in the present world-state the future as well as the past.

By this theory, Hartmann believes himself to have explained not only supernormal intercommunication between human beings, or telepathy, but clairvoyance and prevision. But, he adds, his argument against spiritism is not dependent on the truth of his theory. It depends solely on the existence of the said powers, not on their explanation. Against one thing only he protests—explaining them by means of spirits. That would not be to solve the problem, but to push it one step back and leave it there just as unsolved as before. For, he asks, why should the discarnate any more than the living be able to look into the future?

According to Hartmann, the question is solved if the supernormal faculties of the living be acknowledged.

To ascertain with what right Professor Flournoy and Hartmann appeal to the existence of such faculties, must, therefore, be our next step, and the starting-point for the discussion of the main problem. But it is clear that the investigation must take place within another territory than the disputed one. The statements which a medium adduces in the name of a dead person in proof of his identity cannot be evidence for telepathy or clairvoyance, as the question at issue is just whether they are due to these faculties or are what they purport to be.

As regards telepathy, a valuable material is given in the *Proceedings* of the English Society for Psychical Research,[1] through the publication of a number of experiments between the two sensitives, Miss Clarissa Miles and Miss Hermione Ramsden. The intelligent working method of the two ladies, the contemporaneous recording

[1] Vol. XXI., pp. 60—93.

of the experiments, and their careful annotation, combine to make the results due to their psychical faculties a golden mine for its research.

In the following review of the phenomena, I shall make use of Hartmann's classification, which is very systematic. He divides telepathy into four categories, according to the part played by the will, or intention, respectively of the agent and the percipient. It will be seen that the two of them constitute thought-transference, and the others so-called thought- or mind-rea ing. To the first belong the ordinary experiments in thought-transmission, while the second comprises the more uncommon cases where an agent tries to influence a percipient without the will or knowledge of the latter.

1. Intentional Perception by Intentional Transmission.

Illustrations of this category may be taken from the first series of experiments between Miss Miles and Miss Ramsden, which took place in the autumn of 1905. Miss Miles was staying in London, Miss Ramsden twenty miles from that city; the two ladies had not met since the 14th of June. The arrangement was that the experiments should be tried at 7 p.m.; Miss Miles was agent, and made at the time of the experiment a note of the word or image which she wished to convey, while Miss Ramsden wrote down her impressions, and sent the record to Miss Miles before knowing what she had attempted on her side.

Experiment I.

Miss Miles's note:

"I sat with my feet on the fender, I thought of Sphinx, I tried to visualize it. Spoke the word out loud. I could only picture it to myself quite small as seen from a distance.—C. M."

Miss Ramsden's record:

"I could not visualize, but seemed to feel that you were

sitting with your feet on the fender in an arm-chair, in a loose black sort of tea-gown. The following words occurred to me :

" Peter Evan or 'Eaven (Heaven).
" *Hour-glass* (this seemed the chief idea).
" Worcester deal box.
" Daisy Millar.
" x [1] arm socket or some word like it.
" x suspension bridge.
" x Sophia Ridley.
" x soupirer (in French), which I felt inclined to spell *souspirer*. There is some word with the letter S. I don't seem quite to have caught it.—H. R."

Experiment II.

Miss Miles's note :

" I tried to visualize Sphinx again.—C. M."

Miss Ramsden's record :

" I received a letter from Miss Miles, saying, ' Letter S quite correct, the hour-glass shape extraordinarily correct, also SS at the end or something like it. I shall try again to-morrow at seven. It will come all right.' After this I found it very difficult not to try and *guess* the word instead of making my mind a blank.
" Cossack.
" Cross.
" Compass (?).
" Luzac (the publisher).
" Luxor in Egypt.
" Here I gave up in despair, then suddenly came the word : Whistle ! This I believed to be correct.—H. R."

As may be seen, the percipient received impressions partly of the sound, and partly of the idea. Whether " hour-glass " was due to an impression of the shape of the sphinx seems doubtful. But the *sp*'es in " suspension," and " souspirer," and the *Sph* in " Sophia," show a similar approach to the word as that which will be understood from one's own attempts to recall a forgotten name. The idea the percipient is approaching when she writes " Luxor in Egypt," which she gets hold of during the second experiment in spite of her tendency to guess a

[1] A cross indicates that the impression was especially vivid.

word with *ss*. Perhaps " Ridley " in the first experiment, was already due to an impression of the idea,—Sphinx being almost synonymous for *riddle*.

What Miss Ramsden did not get was, however, the word itself. In spite of her remarkable faculties as a percipient, she almost never received exactly what was sent. To " hit the central mark," is, to employ an expression which is often used when thought-transference is discussed, doubtless very difficult.

Experiment III.

Miss Miles's note :

" I sat before the fire in my sitting-room and visualized a lamp. One of those very old-fashioned lamps with a large globe, which seemed to me to be a round ball of fire.—C. M."

Miss Ramsden's record :

" Scissors, x orangery, shaloop ? shawl, jalousie (blinds), fretwork or sort of trellis in a garden, échantillon (pattern), sleepers, x gum plant or pot ? verisimilitude, Paternoster, tabloids, x orangery, x orange flower, x orange pips, horsewhip, housewife (needlecase), verdigris, purple hedgerow, beech, beatitudes, tea cosy, Burnham Beeches, heather in flower, crown, small box, short deal ? infanticide, x maltese oranges growing in a pot, Chinese slippers, x Cape gooseberries, these look like oranges.

" The most probable seems to be a small Maltese orange tree, such as I have seen in London houses.—H. R."

In this experiment, contrary to the preceding ones, the vision evidently played the chief part. Between the percipient's own ideas, which seem more or less explicable by assonance or association, always and with increasing strength the image of an orange or an orange-tree intrudes itself,—no doubt Miss Miles's lamp with the globe like a " round ball of fire."

Experiment VII.

Miss Miles's note :

" Spectacles.—C. M."

Miss Ramsden's record :

"'Spectacles.' This was the only idea that came to me after waiting a long time. I thought of 'sense perception,' but that only confirms the above. My mind was such a complete blank that I fell asleep.—H. R."

Later on Miss Ramsden added : "I did not visualize the spectacles, the word came to me as a sudden idea." She had at this point determined to try to visualize, being unsatisfied with her attempts to "hear." Miss Miles, again, had on this occasion for the first time tried another method which afterwards became the usual one. Having found that it was easier to impress an idea when it was something that she had seen, and thought of later in the day, she resolved that in future she would make her choice accordingly, and think of some object in connection with Miss Ramsden, without specially sitting down to do so at 7 p.m. On the day of the seventh experiment, she attended a meeting, and had for her neighbour a gentleman who wore a curious pair of spectacles which attracted her attention. These she fixed on as her subject.

The success that attended the first application of the new method was not continued. This was the only time that Miss Ramsden received the very word which her co-experimenter had tried to transfer to her.

2. Non-intentional Perception by Intentional Transmission.

This category does not, probably, number many instances. For the present, I shall confine myself to refer to a case which will be discussed later—Dr. Verrall's attempt to impress his wife to produce automatically some Greek words, while she did not in the least suspect that he was trying to influence her. It bears a close resemblance to the cases given above, where both the transmission and the perception were intentional. There was the same fragmentariness, the same unconscious struggle to grasp now the sound, and now the sense,

which we saw, for instance, in the Sphinx-experiment. And as was often the case with Miss Ramsden, the result was only approximative. Nay, Dr. Verrall's success was inferior to that of the two ladies; if his experiment had not been continued for a length of time, it might have been difficult to discover that he had succeeded in transferring anything whatever.

3. Intentional Perception without Intentional Transmission.

With this category we have reached what Hartmann designates as thought-reading. Of this also we shall find excellent illustrations among the Miles-Ramsden experiments. Already, during their first period of experimenting, in the autumn of 1905, it happened that Miss Ramsden obtained impressions without her co-operator having executed her share in the programme. Such, for instance, was the case on the fourth day appointed for experiments, on October 22nd, Miss Miles notes down:

"I never tried to visualize anything at all. About 6 o'clock to 7.30 I was writing letters to friends. One I was pondering over, for it required an answer. It was from a Polish artist——.—C. M."

Miss Ramsden wrote in a letter of October 25th:

"On Sunday night [October 22nd] I felt that you were not thinking of me, but were reading a letter in a sort of half German writing. The letters had very long tails to them——
"Is there any truth in that?—H. R."

The letter in question was written in a sloping and obviously foreign hand, corresponding with the description by Miss Ramsden.

On the ninth day Miss Miles had, to be sure, thought of something, but Miss Ramsden caught something wholly different. The former had in the afternoon had a visit from a lady, and resolved to make her name the subject

of the experiment. Miss Ramsden did not receive this, but records :

" I visualized : W. M M was more vivid. It suggested your sister-in-law. E V L Evelyn ? or ' Evelina,' which is the name of an old-fashioned novel. Were you thinking about me at all ? These I saw, but no vivid impressions. Perhaps they had been topics of conversation, and were still on your mind.—H. R."

Miss Miles and her visitor had talked of an acquaintance with the initials W. M., and of Miss Miles's sister-in-law, Eveline, whose name Miss Ramsden did not know.

Other instances of Miss Ramsden being able to obtain impressions of names without any intention on the part of Miss Miles are, from a later period of experimenting, " Tichborne," which she caught the day after a gentleman had entertained Miss Miles about Lord Tichborne, and " Lotherton " when the same gentleman had mentioned Lotherton Hall to her.

There seems to be a certain difference between the process when Miss Ramsden is influenced by the agent's thinking of a word, and when this is not so. In the former case she gropes her way with the right word, so to speak, within sight, but generally without obtaining more than an approximation. When, on the contrary, she perceives something which Miss Miles has not intended to transmit, it is no longer mere approximations that she gives ; the perceived thing is in a wise correct, and is given without hesitation. It seems, in fact, to be easier to " perceive " of one's own accord than to grasp the thoughts of an agent.

In the following autumn, 1906, the two ladies recommenced their experiments. Miss Miles during most of the time was far from London, in places which were wholly unknown to Miss Ramsden. She was staying first at Blaise Castle, about 400 miles from the home of her co-experimenter. The plan was, as before, that Miss Ramsden should think of Miss Miles regularly at 7 p.m., while the latter on her side had no fixed time for

thinking of Miss Ramsden, but thought of her more or less during the whole day, and in the evening noted briefly what ideas had been most prominently before her mind.

The result was that she only succeeded occasionally in transferring those ideas, but that almost every day some of Miss Ramsden's impressions represented, more or less closely, something that Miss Miles had been occupied with, or talking about, on the same day. Sometimes it was her surroundings rather than her thoughts which were perceived by Miss Ramsden. In the two cases cited below, Miss Miles had sent no message at all.

On the third day of experimenting she wrote on a post-card dated from Blaise Castle :

" At 7, I was so overcome with the heat that I sat in a white dressing-gown and said I could send no message. You might have seen a castle on a hill, or pencil heads, or a room full of people at Kingsweston all having tea.—C. M."

On the same evening Miss Ramsden caught a series of impressions from Miss Miles's surroundings, among which were the following :

" Now I see a big, plain, old-fashioned English country-house among trees ; it is rather a distant view, I am looking up at it from below, standing in what seems to be a ravine full of trees. There are all sorts of precious curios in the house——"

The curious point is, that Miss Miles had " willed " her to see, not the actual house, but a castle. She writes :

" I tried to make Miss Ramsden think I was living in a castle, as the name of the house would make you think so. It is a square, old-fashioned country-house situated close to the woods. It is full of precious curios ——. A deep ravine full of trees stands between you and the house——"

Miss Ramsden, in fact, had believed Blaise Castle to be a castle, and therefore did not suspect that her vision referred to that building. She comments afterwards on this case as follows :

" I am not a good visualizer, and although I sometimes see visions in the same way as one sees the so-called ' hypnagogic

illusions,' which most of us have experienced, though perhaps rarely, in the moments between sleeping and waking, I am not able to visualize at will, nor can I see in a crystal. Blaise Castle appeared to me after the manner of a hypnagogic illusion ; it was a perfect picture in colour, in fact it was the place itself—so it seemed to me—though I did not know that it was Blaise Castle, as I had imagined the latter to be a real old castle with turrets."

On the day for the thirteenth experiment, November 12th, 1906, Miss Miles, without the knowledge of Miss Ramsden, had returned to London, and made no attempt to impress her co-experimenter. The latter on her side wrote as follows :

"A tree, a bay tree, a camp-stool, a wreath of bays or laurels, a fir tree, a lawn-tennis net and people playing. I don't know what to think of this evening's experiment ; either it is a complete failure or else it is the best success we have ever had. I saw the pattern of the tennis net, then it changed, and I saw that it was a window with white dimity curtains and a criss-cross pattern of green with little pink rosebuds in the centre of each. [*Drawing of a window with curtains.*] First the curtains were shut across the window, and then they were drawn aside. It was a school-room, a big, long, low room, with a long, wide window. The height and width of the room is not much more than that of the window. There is a large table in the middle laid for tea. Two little girls with their hair down their backs, loosely tied with blue and white ribbons, are waltzing together very prettily. I can hear the time they keep, but I cannot hear the music. You and another lady are standing watching them, and I think there is some one else in the room ; she is sitting down.

"I shall be *very* anxious to hear whether this is right. I have my doubts because there were so many other impressions first.—H. R."

Referring to this impression Miss Miles's sister, Mrs. Coventry, wrote :

"My sister, Clarissa Miles, dined with me on Monday, November 12th, at 7.30. My little girl, Nesta, came down on purpose to see her, and she asked her many questions about her lessons, and how she was getting on at her school and about her dancing, of which she is very fond. The wall paper in her bedroom, and nursery, has a trellis work of brown, with bunches of pink roses and green leaves in the centre of each. Also a window very like what Miss Ramsden drew. She

described exactly what had often taken place, Nesta dancing with a little friend, and my sister and I often watching them, and her nurse sitting sewing."

Miss Ramsden was afterwards shown the room, and recognized the wall paper. The room was much smaller than she saw it, but in other respects it was the same. From her drawing of November 12th, it appears that it was not the curtains that had a pattern with rosebuds, which might perhaps be inferred from the description. The window in her sketch, however, is divided in two parts which the real window was not.

In this case, then, Miss Ramsden saw a place and a scene which Miss Miles had not seen recently, and did not think of, but which of course may have been on the threshold of her consciousness during her talk with the child.

During the experiments with Miss Miles, Miss Ramsden, as told above, had been led to try for visions instead of auditory impressions; before this, however, she had had some interesting experiences of the latter type. These are recorded in the *Proceedings* of the American Society for Psychical Research,[1] and partly belong to the category dealt with here.

Miss Ramsden, staying in England, had proposed to a friend in Copenhagen an experiment where she would be the agent while he should be the receiver. It was to take place on a pre-arranged day, September 24th, 1905, at one o'clock in England, which is two o'clock in Denmark. At the said hour Miss Ramsden, after fifteen minutes of intense concentration, asked: "Are you there? Do you hear me?" Then, to her amazement, she heard the voice of her friend calling her name and saying in an amused tone *in Danish:* "Are you there? I cannot hear, speak a little louder . . . your invisible wires . . ."

Miss Ramsden says that the expression "invisible

[1] *Experiments and Experiences in Telepathy*, Vol. V., pp. 673—753.

wires," was one that she had never thought of, and certainly could not have invented in Danish. It turned out, however, that her friend had not at all tried the experiment ; but he had thought of her earlier in the day when he read her letter, and had used the expression " invisible wires," in Danish, in speaking about her to another person.

In this case, then, the would-be agent, Miss Ramsden, had in fact become percipient. It seems correct, though, to interpret the phenomenon as *intentional* perception, both on account of her question to her supposed co-experimenter, " Are you there ? " etc., and on account of the state of concentration she had produced in herself for the sake of the experiment. That she caught something which was said at another time of the day is not different from what she experienced with Miss Miles.

A few days afterwards Miss Ramsden tried to experiment with a lady who was living at Newmarket. The first day she had arranged to be percipient, and heard then what she describes as a " soundless voice " that told her several things which turned out to be a mixture of truth and falsehood. In this case her friend had really " telepathed " to her. But the next day Miss Ramsden was to be agent. The result hereof was wholly negative ; her friend did not receive anything at all. But Miss Ramsden herself after fifteen minutes once more heard the soundless voice, saying :

" I can't hear. Such a pity. I wonder if you heard me . . . Packing . . . off to-morrow . . . so sorry I shall miss your letter . . . mother's health . . . Nelly has a cough, doctor advises change of air——"

It was true that her friend could not " hear," but she had not tried to communicate this fact to Miss Ramsden. The latter knew that she was thinking of leaving, and was anxious about her mother's health. It was *not* true that her pupil, Nelly, had a cough ; nor had the doctor been called in.

Miss Ramsden, then, cannot in this case be said to have

gained knowledge supernormally. It is interesting, though, that she not only got impressions of, but even *heard*, things which were partly false. Also it is noteworthy that her attempt to be agent once more resulted in a perception. It confirms what all the cases of this category have shown—that it is the faculty to obtain impressions which is the principal thing. The part of the agent is of minor importance ; his co-operation is not indispensable, and he can effect nothing when the percipient does not possess the necessary qualities.

4. Non-intentional Perception without Intentional Transmission.

As an instance of this category, Hartmann refers to a case which on account of the informant's authority ought to be quoted with his own words. The renowned Swiss philosopher, Heinrich Zschokke, in his autobiography, writes as follows : [1]

" It sometimes happened that at my first interview with a person hitherto unknown to me, I saw his past life with many small particulars, or perhaps only some scene from it, in a dreamlike and yet clear manner pass before me, quite spontaneously and in the course of a few minutes—— On a market-day in the town of Waldshut, I returned in the evening, tired after a forest-inspection, to the hostelry ' Zum Rebstock ' in the company of two young students of forestry who are still living. We supped at the table d'hôte where the numerous guests were in the act of making fun of the many peculiarities of the Swiss, Mesmer's magnetism, Lavater's physionomics, etc. One of my companions, feeling hurt in his national pride, asked me to protest, especially against a handsome young man who sat opposite to us and delivered the most flippant jokes. The life of this youth had just passed before me. So I addressed myself to him with the question whether he would answer me honestly when I told him the most secret thing of his life, though I knew him no more than he me. That, I said, would be even more than the physionomics of Lavater. He promised me to confess if I told him the truth. Then I related what my dream vision had told me, and the whole company was made acquainted with the

[1] *Selbstschau*, I., p. 227.

life story of this young merchant, his years of apprenticeship, his little aberrations, and finally with a small defalcation from his employer. I described the bare room with the white-washed walls where the black money-box stood on a table to the right of the door, etc. A dead silence reigned in the room during the narration which I only interrupted now and again to ask whether I spoke the truth. Each circumstance was affirmed by the deeply moved youth, even—what I did not expect—the last one."

A small incident which confirms the existence of such a phenomenon where the percipient plays his part just as unintentionally as the person from whom the impression emanates, is the following, which Sir Oliver Lodge [1] quotes about a connection of his own, Mrs. Fred. Lodge. Here, moreover, the two parties were not in the same room, but separated by many miles.

Mrs. Fred. Lodge was expecting her sister from South America, but, being away from home, was unable to meet her at Southampton. So a friend, Mr. P., had offered to do so. While travelling in the train on her way to her home, about 3.30 p.m., Mrs. Lodge closed her eyes to rest, and at the same moment a telegram form appeared before her with the words, " Come at once, your sister is dangerously ill." During the afternoon Mr. Fred. Lodge received a telegram from Mr. P. to his wife, worded exactly as above and sent from Southampton at 3.30 p.m. Mrs. Lodge had no idea of her sister being ill, and was not even at the time thinking about her, but about the illness of her own daughter whom she had just left. The handwriting she saw she recognized to be Mr. P.'s, but the paper was the brown-coloured one of a telegram, while he would have been writing on a white-paper form. Such a mixture of true and false seems to characterize both telepathy and clairvoyance.

[1] *The Survival of Man*, pp. 73—74.

CHAPTER III

CLAIRVOYANCE

As mentioned before, Hartmann was unable to draw a decisive line between telepathy and clairvoyance. Theoretically he was clear enough. "Clairvoyance," he alleges, "differs from thought-reading, in that it is not the contents of another mind which are perceived, but objective facts." But how make sure of this in individual cases?

Hartmann himself stretched the theory of mind-reading as far as possible. When a medium states particulars concerning a sitter's past life, which the latter at the moment believes to be incorrect, but which turn out to be correct, Hartmann contends that the right knowledge was obtained from the sitter's subconsciousness. When the sensitives, without desiring it, in a moment discern the chief events of a person's whole life, it is because their *unconscious* will to read characters and fates forces the person's subconsciousness to recall just these events. Knowledge about an absent person the medium procures either by reading the thoughts of the people present about him, or by entering into rapport with him through a present person, and afterwards reading his own thoughts.

As an illustration of the last-mentioned phenomenon, I may refer to an interesting series of experiments performed by Andrew Lang.[1] Lang demonstrated that certain sensitives could, by looking into a crystal or glass ball, pick up facts unknown to the sitter about people whom they did not know, but who were known to the sitter. He baptized this phenomenon "telepathy *à trois*" after the three participators,—the crystal-gazer,

[1] *Proceedings* S.P.R., Vol. XV., pp. 48 *seqq.*

the sitter, and the sitter's absent acquaintance. He did not, however, feel sure that the performance was not due to clairvoyance, rather than to telepathy. But such would not have been the opinion of Hartmann,—his criterion of clairvoyance just being the absence of every interconnection, or rapport, between the sensitive and the thing perceived. That it is practically impossible to be sure of such an absence is another matter. Hartmann, in fact, finished by referring to prevision as the one kind of clairvoyance about which there could be no doubt.

Somewhat inconsistently, however, he classified as clairvoyance *psychometry* or, to cite his own words, " the reconstruction of persons or characters by means of locks of hair, written documents, and other articles to which their personal *aura* is attached."

Psychometry, it would seem, is a rather common art in the latter days, even if it be not easy to find well-attested cases of it. Miss Miles and Miss Ramsden both seem to practise it. Miss Miles says that since the year 1892, at which time circumstances " brought out all the clairvoyant faculty that had been dormant " in her, she has been able to see in crystals, psychometrize letters or articles for people, and tell fortunes for her friends. Miss Ramsden writes concerning her in 1906 that she is a very good psychometrist, who has often held letters for her and described scenes in connection with the life of the writer. At a later time they made some very careful experiments in psychometry of which Miss Ramsden relates :

" I collected a number of articles such as pens, thimbles, safety pins, watch chains, from relations and servants, allowing her to choose one, while I sat on the other side of a screen, our object being to test whether I should be able to recognize the owner of the articles from her description, and also whether her knowledge was really gained through contact with the article, and not through reading my mind. The result was quite satisfactory, she not only gave accurate descriptions of the owners, but also detailed information of which I was entirely ignorant, but was afterwards able to verify."

About herself Miss Ramsden writes that she has had "several successes, and also many failures, in what is called psychometry, *i.e.*, holding an article and describing the owner and scenes from his or her surroundings."

Among older accounts of the phenomenon may be chosen the following, where Mr. Edmund Gurney vouches for the trustworthiness of the narration.[1] An acquaintance of his, Mrs. Stella, of Chieri, Italy, hearing that there was a "sonnambula" in the neighbouring town, went to see her out of pure curiosity. The sitting, which commenced with the woman being placed in a state of trance by a young girl who then left the house, did, however, shake her disbelief, and she sent a description of it to Mr. Gurney. She narrates as follows:

"The woman first gave me a personal description of myself, nationality, etc., with a description of character, which was perfectly correct——. I then gave her some hair which I had combed out of a brush in my stepson's travelling bag, he having just arrived from Spain. She took the hair in her hand, placing it on her forehead, and at the same time leaving her hold on my hand. At first she was puzzled and confused, but soon her ideas seemed to become more distinct, and then she told me his relationship to myself, giving an exact personal description of his appearance, character, etc. She did not call him my stepson, but 'a close relation without consanguinity.' I then asked her where he lived, what he did, etc. She told me all, even to unimportant details. For instance, she said, 'Yesterday, he rode into the country, got off his horse, and bought some cigars. The tobacconist could not give him change, so seeing two friends passing he asked them to change the note.' I knew nothing of this, but asked my boy when I returned home, and found it true."

Mr. Gurney suggested that this may have been a case of reading the mind of a person not present through its affinity to the person who was present; no doubt it makes, setting aside the "article," a parallel to Lang's telepathy *à trois*. But it is worth noticing the Italian psychic's proceedings when going to psychometrize the young man's hair. She not only took it in her hand and

[1] *Proceedings* S.P.R., Vol. VII., p. 99.

placed it on her forehead, but, what is more significant, she let go Mrs. Stella's hand which she had hitherto held. If she meant to reach him through the stepmother, she must have done quite the reverse. She, at least, must have believed that it was from the article and not from the sitter that her impressions were derived.

With a well-known English medium, Mr. Vout Peters, a series of psychometrical sittings were held, under scientific supervision, in the spring of 1908, at Helsingfors in Finland. The inspecting committee afterwards published a number of the stenographic records, annotated by those sitters whose articles had been psychometrized.[1] In this manner were procured materials of evidential value, from which no small amount of knowledge about the phenomenon may be gained.

Mr. Vout Peters regards his psychometric faculty as something wholly apart from mind-reading. The committee that supervised his performances leaned to the latter explanation—not because they could account for their opinion, but because they found the psychometrical theory too inconceivable. But the medium protested emphatically against this. "I don't get before me what you expect," he said; "I get the actual facts." He maintains that his impressions are due to an *aura* attached to the articles. They crowd, he says, upon him with such rapidity, that he can scarcely manage to translate them into words. He not only sees and hears, but feels as if the whole of his body knew about the things he is going to tell.

Mr. Peters's utterances are confirmed and supplemented by the published records. It seems as if he can feel that which the person he speaks about is supposed to have felt, nay as if he can feel his character or nature within himself. His psychometrizing consisted of character-descriptions and the telling of incidents from the life of the owners of the articles; at the same time, he seemed

[1] *Meddelanden* utgifna af Sällskapet för Psykisk Forskning i Helsingfors. No. 1.

unable to describe their exterior; in one case when, contrary to his habit, he tried such a description which was far from correct, he said: "I can't tell his complexion, because I only feel him as within myself." Generally he could not even tell whether it was a man or a woman he psychometrized, unless the object itself gave some indication of it. But he could feel whether the person in question had been ill or infirm; once he said that he saw indistinctly as if the owner of the article had been blind in his old age, which had, in fact, been the case.

The committee published those among Mr. Peters's performances which they considered the best ones; they were very unequal, and at least a fourth part are described as failures. Also in the successful cases errors did occur; but on the whole they were of a character to convince most people that his power of supernormal perception was remarkable. I shall cite a few of them.

Some months before the arrival of Mr. Peters in Finland, a young university student from Helsingfors, politically interested, was found dead on the railway line, run over by the train, but with traces of a revolver shot through his head. Circumstances made it probable that another person had fired the shot, and afterwards placed the body on the lines. When it was found, it was covered with snow.

Several objects which the young man had had upon him when he died—a pocket-book, a watch, and some money—were at three different sittings given to Mr. Peters for psychometrizing, of course without his knowing that they had belonged to the same person. It is true that it was the same lady who brought them, but there were a great many people present at the seances, and no likelihood of the medium recognizing them individually. Besides, the articles were not handed to him personally by those who had brought them, and the same person might of course bring articles from more than one owner. At any rate there is not, either in this or in other cases,

anything which intimates that Mr. Peters suspected that he spoke about a person whom he had characterized before. In this case it is worth noting that he caught from each object impressions that were partially new, although with scarcely any exception they were consistent with the facts.

With the pocket-book in his hand he gave the following correct statements :

" The first impression I get is an impression of wanting to throw away the pocket-book, an impression of death, of some one who has passed away.

" When I hold the pocket-book, I feel that the person who owned it used to do so [*Mr. Peters walks rapidly to and fro on the floor*], when thinking.

" And he wanted, when thinking, to move something. He easily became enervated. I have a sensation of immense activity, of being tremendously busy and having much to do in life. He writes rapidly.

" It was a very open nature, an honest nature, he could not and would not tell a lie, nor do anything wrong, because he *could* not.

" He used to do so when speaking [*Mr. Peters pushes his hair from his forehead*].

" This person had for a time had much to fight against. And before he had won the battle, he died."

It was on this occasion that the medium said that he seemed to feel the person within himself, and gave a description of his appearance ; here the items which referred to the young man's figure were correct, while those which referred to his face were wrong.

With the young man's watch in his hand, Mr. Peters at the next sitting said :

" The first impression I get with this watch is a pain in my head, a pain just above the right eye.

" Whoever possessed it, was a very quick, impulsive, energetic person who was capable of acting incautiously. He stood in the midst of a danger, and went towards it though he was warned. It seemed to overtake him suddenly, and for a moment it was as if he became stunned, and then he gets that pain in his head. I cannot tell what happened. I feel as a blow against the head, and it is in a whirl, so to speak."

After an interval of three sittings some pieces of money that had been found upon the young man's body were handed to the medium. Mr. Peters objected that it was difficult to psychometrize money, because it had been handled by so many people, and asked whether they were connected with some special incident. Having been answered in the affirmative, he said:

"They belonged to someone who used to sing, who was a bright and happy nature. It was a person who didn't care much about money, or what people call practical things, but took life joyfully. I do not, however, mean to say that it was a careless nature. I don't know whether I can get much out of this, but I feel as if this bright joy would be extinguished of a sudden, as if something would suddenly happen. I have a sensation as if water arose, and a feeling of intense cold. I have the feeling that the spirit leaves the body without the body lying in its bed. It is as if the body stood erect and was dressed while life flees. I have a feeling of wanting to scream, but not being able to. I feel it as if nobody would hear me even if I screamed. And a sensation of absolute helplessness comes over me."

All this would be correct if snow were substituted for water as the cause of the feeling of cold.

Mr. Peters showed a certain preference for the psychometrizing of letters, which he seemed to find specially adapted to preserve the "aura." It is considered certain that he did not try to obtain information by means of the handwriting. When dealing with an article, he used to place it in his left hand; he did the same with letters, without unfolding or in any way examining them. Neither did he care for the language used in them, as in no case did he look at their contents. The letters which he psychometrized in Finland were generally written in Swedish. One of them came from a personality well-known in history, the hero of Sweden's fight with Russia about Finland, von Döbeln, who died in the year 1820. About this letter the medium spoke as follows:

"This letter, though old, is full of strength. Whoever wrote it, is a person with a very strong character and a strong individuality, vivid, quick, precise and somewhat exacting;

who had a very strong will and was fond of governing, of being the master of all with whom he got into contact. Nevertheless, beneath this hard exterior there was a very good nature, a very good heart. It was someone who was fond of reading and studying, and who was so to speak ahead of the age he lived in. There was some difficulty for this person,—whether it was a man or a woman, I will not decide,—but it was difficult for him to be himself in the place where he stood.

" This person was a little impatient. If he waited for something, he showed his impatience. I feel when I describe this as if I must do so with my fingers [*gesture*]. I don't assert that the person in question did so, but I express impatience."

The annotations, taken from historical and biographical works, show in every particular an exact correspondence to the characterization given by Mr. Peters. Von Döbeln was not only a great commander with the temperament of the born ruler, but intelligent and warm-hearted withal. His spare time he employed in reading, quite an unusual thing with Swedish officers of that period. His greatest faults were impetuosity and impatience; it was better, people said, to commit a blunder than to ask him twice about the same thing. To his misfortune, his superiors were mediocrities to whom he would not bow; thus it might rightly be said that it " was difficult for him to be himself in the place where he stood."

The mediumism of Mr. Vout Peters presents another phenomenon, his so-called spirit-visions. During the sittings, the psychometrizing is now and again interrupted by the description of forms whom he generally alludes to as standing beside some one among the sitters, and who are in many cases recognized by the person designated. It is seldom that the description refers to the owners of the articles; among fourteen descriptions of recognized figures, published by the committee, this was only the case with two. This phenomenon, however, carries us beyond the subject of the present discussion—supernormal perception without any alleged participation of the dead. I have merely mentioned it to point out a most remarkable difference between these visions and the impressions obtained by the medium by means of the

articles. The latter were throughout, even when correct, rather vague and not at all exhaustive. Thus in the case of the murdered student we saw that the medium could every time tell something new. Neither could he by means of the articles describe the exterior of their owners. The spirit-descriptions, on the contrary, refer above all to the outward appearance, being in return so exact and precise, that, for instance, in a case where the same lady was seen twice by Mr. Peters after an interval of two sittings, the wording of the two descriptions was all but identical. If these visions be due to clairvoyance, they represent, in fact, a quite separate type of this phenomenon.

We have now reached the top rung of the ladder, the apparently highest of the supernormal powers of man, but at the same time the one which it is most difficult to accept—namely the faculty of prevision. On mentioning this phenomenon in his book, *The Survival of Man*, Sir Oliver Lodge cites Frederic Myers as one of those who recognized its reality as a possibility worthy of serious discussion. In eloquent and beautiful words this pioneer of psychical research wrote:

"Few men have pondered long on these problems of Past and Future without wondering whether Past and Future be in very truth more than a name—whether we may not be apprehending as a stream of sequence that which is an ocean of co-existence—— Let us imagine that a whole earth-life is in reality an absolutely instantaneous although an infinitely complex phenomenon. Let us suppose that my transcendental self discerns with equal directness and immediacy every element of this phenomenon; but that my empirical self receives each element mediately, and through media involving different rates of retardation; just as I receive the lightning more quickly than the thunder. May not then seventy years intervene between my perceptions of birth and death as easily as seven seconds between my perceptions of the flash and the peal? And may not some intercommunication of consciousness enable the wider self to call to the narrower, the more central to the more external, 'At such an hour this shock will reach you! Listen for the nearing roar!'"[1]

[1] *The Survival of Man*, pp. 159—160.

The poetical illustration of Myers suits especially those cases where an important and sad occurrence is foreseen. Such cases are probably those most often heard of ; death plays the principal part in this strange phenomenon. Living people who are seen dead though they have not been ill, funeral processions where the visionary recognizes the mourners and by this means can tell who is lying in the coffin—previsions of this type abound. Allied to these are the following cases which I reproduce from Mrs. Sidgwick's paper, "On the Evidence for Premonitions," [1] that contains a carefully sifted material where only the best attested instances have found admission.

A lady in India, who had lost several children, heard a voice say, "If there is darkness at the eleventh hour there will be death." About a week after, a little girl was taken ill. Two or three days passed ; the sun blazed above, and the child hovered between life and death. At last, after more than a week of cloudless weather, a few minutes before eleven in the morning a squall arose, and the sky became black. That day, soon after one o'clock, the child died.

A lady in London, Mrs. Schweizer, dreamed that she was walking on the edge of a cliff, her son Fred and a stranger a little in advance, when her son slipped suddenly down the side of the cliff. She turned to the stranger and asked for his name, and got the reply, "My name is Henry Irvin." She said, "Do you mean Irving the actor ? " "No," he replied, "not exactly : but something after that style." Her son was then on a journey, but the anxious mother told her dream to his brother. A week afterwards, Mr. Frederick Schweizer went for a ride on horseback along with a casual acquaintance named Deverell ; his horse shied, he was thrown on the road, and expired three hours later. When his mother arrived

[1] *Proceedings* S.P.R., Vol. V., pp. 288—354. Mrs. Sidgwick employs the term "premonition" as comprising more cases than "prevision." Clairvoyance, however, being used to designate both what is heard and seen supernormally, or caught by impressions, it seems permissible to stretch prevision in a similar manner.

at the place of his death, she recognized in Mr. Deverell the stranger of her dream, and asked him at once if his name was Henry. When he answered, " Yes, my name is Henry," she told the dream. He was extremely impressed, and told her that he occasionally took part in private theatricals, and was on those occasions introduced as " Henry Irvin, junior."

Both cases are remarkable on account of the strange details which cannot be explained as due to guessing or chance. Noteworthy is in the latter case the mixture of true and false; only the main points are correct: the fall of the son, the stranger's relation to the name Henry Irvin; the rest of the dreamed-of scene is construction.

A contrast to the previsions of death is presented by a number of cases where the foreseen event is of quite an ordinary and often extremely trivial character. I borrow a few examples from Mrs. Sidgwick.[1]

An American lady saw a friend, Mrs. Gonner, falling up the front steps in the yard of her house, about one mile and a half distant, while a lot of papers which she had in her hand were scattered around her. The vision took place about two o'clock, the fall, with many minutely foretold circumstances, at 2.40 p.m.

A lady, Mrs. Mackenzie, one morning at breakfast told her house party that she had had the following dream. She thought there were several people in her drawing-room, among others Mr. J., and she left the room to see if supper was ready, and when she came back she found the carpet covered with black spots. She was very angry, and when Mr. J. said it was ink stains, she retorted, " Don't say so, I know it has been burned, and I counted five patches." So ends the dream. Afterwards they all went to church, and on their return Mr. J. came with them to luncheon, a thing he had never done before. And now everything happened as in the dream. Mrs. Mackenzie went into the dining-room to see if things were

[1] The first case is taken from her paper, " On the Evidence for Clairvoyance," *Proceedings* S.P.R., Vol. VII., pp. 30—99.

ready, and then going back into the drawing-room she noticed a spot near the door and asked who had been in with dirty feet ; Mr. J. said it was surely ink, and then pointed out some more spots, when Mrs. Mackenzie called out, " Oh ! my dream ! my new carpet ! burnt ! " As they afterwards discovered, the housemaid had carried in live coals which she had dropped on the carpet, burning five holes.

A lady in London dreamed that she found a brooch upon a seat in Richmond Park, which she gave to her maid. She mentioned the dream to the maid next morning. Unexpectedly, she went to Richmond on the following afternoon, and found the brooch on the seat as in her dream.

The triviality of previsions such as these is of a special interest, because it speaks loudly against connecting them with spirits, or on the whole believing that they are due to an intention. Mrs. Sidgwick justly remarks that we have no reason to suppose " that premonitions, if they exist, are a species of petty private miracles intended to help us in conducting our affairs—temporal or spiritual."

Sir Oliver Lodge, too, is seen to share the opinion of Hartmann, that the question of prevision has nothing to do with the question of spirits, when he writes :

" The anticipation of future events is a power not at all necessarily to be expected on a Spiritistic or any other hypothesis ; it is a separate question, and will have important bearings of its own. An answer to this question in the affirmative may vitally affect our metaphysical notions of ' Time,' but will not of necessity have an immediate bearing on the existence in the universe of intelligences other than our own. A cosmic picture gallery (as Mr. Myers calls it), a photographic or phonographic record of all that has occurred or will occur in the universe, may conceivably—or perhaps not conceivably—in some sense exist, and may be partly open and dimly decipherable to the lucid part of the automatist's or entranced person's mind." [1]

By virtue of such a faculty of " dimly deciphering," it is, then, that the ordinary clairvoyant displays his art

[1] *The Survival of Man*, p. 151.

when people "consult" him. But well-attested cases of such prophesying are no doubt scarce. As an instance may be referred to a case mentioned by Mrs. Sidgwick, where a medium in Boston told an English lady that she had a picture of her children with her, and on seeing it pointed to one of these, a boy of seventeen, saying that he would die soon and suddenly. A few weeks after the return of the mother to England her son was killed at a game of football.

Mr. Vout Peters, too, often foretells the future when psychometrizing articles whose owners are living. Miss Miles is, as told above, not only able to psychometrize, but also able to tell fortunes for people. She is withal spontaneously foresighted. Coming events, she writes, are so distinctly impressed on her mental vision, that they become a positive nuisance. As for Miss Ramsden, she has had many premonitory dreams, and when she has tried to write down impressions—being unable to write automatically—the writing generally consists of prophecies of evil to come. The proportion of truth to fiction being about fifty per cent., she has found it to be a most uncomfortable faculty, and so has discontinued the exertion of it.

It appears, then, to have been in every particular possible to find evidence to prove that Hartmann and Professor Flournoy were right in their assertion about the supernormal powers of man. Certain people can in a more or less mysterious manner obtain knowledge about others, about distant events, about the past, nay, about the future.

The only point where it proved difficult to agree with Hartmann was perhaps in his attempt to fix a boundary between telepathy and clairvoyance; an attempt, however, which he was not himself able to carry through. The greater number of psychical researchers acknowledge the difficulty of distinguishing between the two phenomena. Mrs. Sidgwick intimates that the line drawn

between them has not much scientific value. Professor Hyslop writes when referring to Miss Ramsden's experiments that she has " access to the marginal data in the mind of the agent, if ' in that mind ' rightly describes the facts," and in another place : " There is a fragmentary access to various facts belonging to the agent's mind, or connected with her physical environment and possibly not in her mind at all." And Sir Oliver Lodge accentuates that " we must not too readily assume that the apparent action of one mind on another is really such an action."

Possibly, then, there is reason to ask whether Hartmann and others have not assigned to telepathy a larger part than is due to it. Because it was possible to make intentional thought-transference the subject of experiments, it became for the researchers the natural starting-point for the treatment of the whole problem. It seemed to be scientifically correct to proceed from thought-transference to thought-reading as from the known to the less known, and to cling to the utmost to this " explanation " as preferable to the wholly mysterious clairvoyance. But in reality the matter stands otherwise. It is the faculty of perception that is the commencement of the whole phenomenon. The percipient, the sensitive, the psychic, the medium—whatever he is to be called—is the principal factor also in intentional thought-transference. There must be a more or less sensitive person to impress if the agent shall effect anything at all. Nay, the agent is, in fact, just as secondary as the percipient is important. The percipient is even better able to catch things which the agent is not thinking about than those which he is striving to transmit with all his might. This was evident in the Miles-Ramsden experiments. Intentional thought-transference is so to speak an artificial scion, grafted into the naturally growing tree of supernormal perception.

But with *perception* as starting-point the second class of telepathic phenomena, thought- or mind-reading, appears in a new light. That clairvoyance exists is at any rate shown through prevision. Why then not give

it its due and admit that supernormal perception *is* clairvoyance, and so-called mind-reading only an element of it? The impression must, doubtless, have some cause besides the faculty of the sensitive. In psychometry this cause seems to be an article, inconceivable as it may be. In the apprehension of a present person's character and life-story, his presence seems to be the cause. In this case we may as well say that he is psychometrized as that an article is. But this is not equivalent to his thoughts being read. It is himself, the whole of his personality, that is psychometrized; because his thoughts are an element of the personality, they may slip in, but only as one factor among many. On account of this, things may be perceived which the psychometrized person believes to be right, but which are wrong. On the other hand, true facts may be perceived without regard to the erroneous belief of the sitter.

In cases where the cause of the perception is neither an article nor the presence of a person, it may often be characterized as a rapport between the clairvoyant and the thing perceived, and this rapport may be a person. Such was the case with regard to the perceptions of Miss Ramsden; even when Miss Miles did not perform her duty as agent, the once established connection—the invisible wires, as Miss Ramsden's friend in Copenhagen appropriately called them—continued to exist. And, doubtless, in those cases where the cause cannot be discovered, some unknown line of connection exists which leads this impression just to this percipient.

For our problem, however, it may in a degree be said to be of slight consequence whether the line drawn by Hartmann between telepathy and clairvoyance is abolished or not. Whether it is by mind-reading, psychometry, or direct clairvoyance, that mediumistic individuals become possessed of their supernormal knowledge, is unimportant in proportion to the fact that all these powers exist, and must be reckoned with as a possible explanation of the alleged communications from the dead.

Still, one circumstance must be pointed out before the discussion of the supernormal powers of man can be completed. The evidence which we found for their existence at the same time spoke loudly about their limitation. Even Miss Ramsden's most successful perceptions were only approximative. With regard to the visionary impressions this is clearly seen in the cases where she subjoins a sketch of her vision; though it is impossible to deny its resemblance to the real thing, it most often turns out to be a far from correct reproduction of it. As to the auditions, the incorrectness was even greater. Neither are the achievements of the professional mediums perfect. Of Mr. Vout Peters's performances in Helsingfors at least a fourth part were failures, and even the best ones contained errors. In cases which are not given *verbatim*, as for instance Mrs. Stella's, we cannot of course expect to get full information about the incorrect statements. In the cases of prevision, too, we find the same inaccuracy. Rightly Sir Oliver Lodge uses expressions as " partly open " and " dimly decipherable " when he metaphorically describes the relation between the clairvoyant persons and the record which they are reading. That kind of clairvoyance which the name denotes does not seem to exist. A dim and clouded vision would be a more correct designation for supernormal perception.

Only with this reservation can we subscribe to the assertion of Hartmann.

SECTION II

The Automatic Writing of Mrs. Verrall

CHAPTER IV

INTRODUCTION. DR. VERRALL'S EXPERIMENT

The instances of supernormal perception by means of which Hartmann's assertion was illustrated must necessarily be taken from cases where no participation of the dead was assumed. This, however, involved that it was as a rule perception in a waking condition we had to deal with. For with the trance state imagination sets in, and most often gives birth to the idea of an extra-terrestrial origin of the mediumistic productions.

With the trance, then, we have reached quite a new territory. A state of concentration or otherwise abnormal condition is probably the necessary accessory both of telepathy, psychometry, and clairvoyance; Miss Ramsden accentuates the importance of concentration, and Mr. Vout Peters says that he puts himself in a slight ecstasy when accomplishing his performances. But this is very different from the state which excludes the psychic's waking co-operation and conscious apprehension of his perceptions. Only in that state commences the production of those romances which Professor Flournoy relates. Cryptomnesia, also, of course implies that the waking consciousness is in abeyance.

What is said here, however, is not confined to real trance, but includes as well that state in which the otherwise waking individual is automatically producing speech or script without knowing what he produces. Mrs. A. W. Verrall, whose automatic script we are first going to

examine, gives an account of the manner of its production which shows how completely this is the case with her. The words come to her as single things, she says, and seem to vanish as soon as she has written them. She perceives a word or two, but never understands whether it makes sense with what goes before. Though she is aware at the moment of writing what language her hand is using, when the script is finished she often cannot say what language has been used as the recollection of the words passes away with extreme rapidity. She is sometimes exceedingly sleepy during the production of the writing, and more than once she has momentarily lost consciousness of her surroundings.

There seems to be no reason to doubt that this is a state similar to trance as regards the co-operation of consciousness. It is quite another matter when Miss Ramsden describes her impressions, and reasons about their being right or wrong, etc. Mrs. Verrall is just as ignorant of her writing as she is irresponsible for it.

The problem, then, which will occupy us in the following pages is, how to account for the origin of her productions.

Mrs. A. W. Verrall is a most intelligent lady, with extensive knowledge of modern and ancient literature, a lecturer in Greek at Newnham College in Cambridge. She has herself in the *Proceedings* of the Society for Psychical Research[1] published a report of her automatic writing during the first four years of its existence (1901—1904). She has done this with a critical sense which is both acute and fine, and which in many points makes her clear-sighted as to the character of the script. That an intimate connection exists between its contents and her own mind is shown, she says, in the languages used; in quotations from authors known to her, in allusions to literary and other subjects familiar to her. She speaks of " the extremely far-fetched nature of associations in the region of her subliminal self " ; she points out the part

[1] Vol. XX., pp. 1—432.

played by assonance,—as when *Daphne* seems suggested by *daffodil*, and the like. But in spite of all this, she does not believe that the script as a whole originates from her own self. It can intrude upon it and often does so ; but the chief part is due to other factors.

Mrs. Verrall had been interested in psychical phenomena for many years before she herself succeeded in producing automatic script. She had tried writing and " planchette " as well as crystal-gazing ; her experiments in the latter direction were published in the *Proceedings ;* but with a few doubtful exceptions the pictures so seen were, she herself says, purely fantastical. She was a very close friend of that eminent representative of psychical research in England, Frederic Myers. Like herself and her husband, Dr. A. W. Verrall, he resided in Cambridge. His death in Rome, on January 17th, 1901, was a double bereavement ; she not only lost a friend, but the one who had more than any other been the participator of her interest in psychical matters.

From January 19th, 1901, Mrs. Verrall recommenced her attempts to obtain psychical phenomena. She sat in the darkness, she held her hand on a planchette or tried with a pencil. On March 5th her efforts were crowned with success, and her first script was produced. It contained about eighty words almost entirely in Latin, but though the words seemed to make phrases, there was no general sense in these. By degrees, though, the script became more comprehensible ; besides Latin and Greek, English too was employed.

When reading consecutively a large quantity of Mrs. Verrall's script, one is struck at the same time with its learned and poetical character, and with its want of cohesion, its use of wrong quotations and self-fabricated language, its apparent profundities which most often turn out to be nonsense ; to all of which must be added its faltering and seeking, its groping both for words and ideas. All this can be explained in different ways. The learning and the poetry may be due to Myers

in whose name the script most frequently speaks, in a more or less open manner. The confusion may be due to Mrs. Verrall's automatic self that, like the dream-self, lacks the reasoning power of the waking consciousness. The groping and faltering may be due to the automatist's defective power of perception. But the learning and poetry may also be due to Mrs. Verrall's own high culture and philological erudition. Her subconscious memory may bring to light matter which she had normally forgotten, so that the script will in a manner give more than she herself would be capable of giving, and at the same time less, owing to the want of control on the part of the waking intelligence. There remains, then, the question of the origin of those things which the automatist gropingly seems to seek.

It will be necessary, I believe, to analyze a large portion of the script in order to answer these questions. It does not suffice to give instances. There ought not to remain anything after examination which might justly be advanced in support of an opposite theory to that which will be laid down here.

. . . . . .

One of the questions asked above referred to the cause of the seeking and groping which was sometimes apparent in the script. No doubt it is not certain beforehand that it is due to an external source; everybody knows from personal experience what it is to search one's own memory for a forgotten word. On the other hand, we have seen how Miss Ramsden groped for the things which Miss Miles tried to transmit to her. Now it happens that Mrs. Verrall's script of an early period presents an instance of her being made to receive an impression from a willing agent, without willing it and without knowing anything about it. The case has been mentioned as an illustration of Hartmann's category of "non-intentional perception by intentional transmission"; it will later on be very useful in the discussion of these problems. So I propose to reproduce it at some length.

Not long after the inception of Mrs. Verrall's automatic writing, in April, 1901, her husband decided to try whether he could by thought-transference produce a certain thing in her script. He chose for his subject a Greek sentence, and though she partly wrote in Greek this no doubt rendered the whole thing more difficult. At the same time, it was of course wise to choose something quite out of the ordinary, in order that a possible success might not be ascribed to chance.

The sentence was μονόπωλον ἐς ἀῶ, and belonged to a passage from the *Orestes* of Euripides set for translation in the Tripos of 1873, the year of Dr. Verrall's degree; it had at the time caused some mirth between himself and his friends, among whom were Edmund Gurney, who died in 1888, and Dr. A. T. Myers, who died in 1894. The literal translation of the phrase is "to the one-horse [car of] dawn"; in Dr. Verrall's opinion the translation ought to be "to the lonely wandering dawn." The incident was never known, as far as they were aware, to his future wife.

The result of the experiment was that Mrs. Verrall never produced the phrase in her automatic script; but that in the course of the summer of 1901, from May to September, it presented in so many different ways an approximation now to the sound of the words, and now to their sense, that it is impossible to doubt that she was unconsciously influenced by her husband's thought. At the same time it is seen that not only the sentence which he wanted to get written, but other circumstances connected with the episode from 1873, were reflected in the script. Besides, other occurrences of his, but possibly known to Mrs. Verrall, seem to have appeared in the script as a consequence of her exertions to produce his Greek words. Further, it is interesting to see that he himself is often referred to during these exertions, as if her subconsciousness together with the impression received quite a correct idea as to its origin, and this in spite of Mrs. Verrall's own conception imprinting on the whole

production the stamp of being derived from another source.

It will appear from the following extracts that the efforts of the script were with a single exception—μονοχιτωνος on July 31st—for a long time directed exclusively towards the notion of *dawn*. At that notion it aimed directly and indirectly, the latter mostly by means of the symbols cock and cock-crowing. Mrs. Verrall herself thinks that the first allusion is to be found in a script of June 16th, 1901; I believe it dates further back, and that the script of May 11th is already connected with Dr. Verrall's experiment, although another element, of which account will be rendered later on, intermingles with it. I commence therefore with the earlier script which both alludes to Dr. Verrall, and contains the drawing of a bird which Mrs. Verrall interpreted as a cock and in jest dubbed "the cockyoly bird."

May 11*th*, 1901.

"Do not hurry date this hoc est quod volui—tandem [this is what I have wanted—at last]. —— A. W. V. [*in Greek*:] and perhaps some one else. Calx pedibus inhaerens difficultatem superavit [chalk sticking to the feet has got over the difficulty]. ——"

"A. W. V." is in the script the usual designation for Dr. A. W. Verrall, when it does not say "your husband." As Mrs. Verrall believes that another personality makes use of her hand, she addresses herself in the second person, and means when she says "I" the invisible writer. The sentence, "This is what I have wanted—at last," also intimates that it is Dr. Verrall's phrase the script refers to. But just like as in dreaming one matter is by a

desultory association of ideas interwoven with another; the idea of the cock leads to something wholly different; the words "Chalk sticking to the feet," etc., have their own curious history. Altogether, it would be unjustifiable to connect the script with Dr. Verrall's experiment if the interesting bird did not reappear under circumstances which show that it is meant to symbolize the dawn.

The next writings referring to the experiment run as follows:

June 16th, 1901.

"Five stars in the east that is not right. Can't you understand—avis ille incredibilis redibit [the incredible bird will return] —— Show it all to your husband——

July 4th, 1901.

"Yellow is the colour of the dawn——

July 31st, 1901.

"Longaevus senex barba alba μονοχιτωνος [an aged man with a white beard, one-garmented] ——

August 13th, 1901.

"[*Drawing of a cock*] cock a crested cock that crows is the emblem—not a real bird, heraldic—with a motto—cano canam albam [I sing the white dawn]."

The last script contained withal an allusion to an incident connected with Dr. Verrall, the loss of a hat and a hatbox some years previously: "Hat—a black hat in a box belonging to him was lost." Afterwards follow quickly one upon the other, a number of writings connected with the experiment.

August 16th, 1901.

"Easier and easier, though you do not know. The cock is inside a circle perhaps a coin. Try for the words again. Cano canti clam no carmen cano [I sing a song] Canam somehow belongs —— *going towards the east.* A. W. V. will understand this—I think of him when I say it. You do not know.

August 20th, 1901.

"[*Remarks in Greek about others being present.*] Now you must see that it is right. The long room with the many windows is near this hot room—he was outside—how plain it seems to me! but you don't know. Arthur [*Dr. A. T. Myers?*] can tell you.

August 23rd, 1901.

"Canta catechumen no that's not right —— But it looks like canta and then something. The cock is really important —crowing in a circle [*circle drawn*] there is writing round the bird letters raised ɔTrA something like that. And there is something gold about it somewhere. Canticlere is nearer [*drawing of bell*] a bell.

August 28th, 1901.

"[*Drawing of cock in circle*] Kikiriki! it is better now—the emblem is within the circle. golden I think —— Ask A. W. he will recognize this —— Cappa or Cana is a word that belongs. Cantilupe is more like—cant ilenam Cantiaris —— [*drawing of sundial*] x x x in the east to the daylight—happily. Now write the word—it runs round a dial or font."

As may be seen, the script of August 16th had placed the cock within a circle or perhaps a coin. This idea was followed up on August 23rd where it was said that there were letters round the bird; besides, a sundial was mentioned, and on August 28th the two motives, the cock and the sundial, were closely connected; there seemed to be a question of a sundial with an inscription round the ring and a cock in the middle. This is another interweaving like that which is known from dreams. But the remarkable point is, that all the motives have something to do with Dr. Verrall. He had once composed a Latin description for a friend of Frederic Myers; it seems that the object to be inscribed was a mantelpiece, but that his recollection was that it was a sundial. It is of course possible that it was the mention of a sundial in the script, which was shown to him by his wife, that made him connect the inscription with such a one; if this be the case, the placing of it in a circle is Mrs. Verrall's own subliminal invention. But at any rate the fact remains, that she in her script connected her husband's Latin inscription with the cock of whose relation to him she was normally ignorant.

After the conversation between Dr. and Mrs. Verrall about the sundial and the inscription, the script no more reverted to these subjects, but continued in the following manner:

August 29th, 1901.

"Cantilect—that is not so good as before—Cantuar ϵC. and a heraldic bird in colours—the light comes through, on a window to the east——

September 2nd, 1901.

"Canticlene has a word to say—one for him not you —— There could be more. Malleson —— Don't give up. Listen again—waly is the beginning—perhaps vale, two syllables ἐς τὸ—— follow the valy—it comes again."

This was the first of a series of attempts to produce the identical Greek words, ἐς ἀῶ and μονόπωλον, of which the following are the clearest :

September 4th, 1901.

"Find it and you will see —— μονοστολος—μονοχιτωνος μονος [single-vested—single-robed alone] —— There were others but he knew more than the rest ——

September 7th, 1901.

"Mol es to but the ϵC is the end of the word —— ϵς there are o and l before the es. ολ——ϵς Tender es fusa a long word like that.

September 9th, 1901.

"Ol un c es that's not right—but the m comes before the ϵς a g iles. I can't tell you the sense, only the letters. It was someone else's words, not his—His are the other, quite separate.—moleskin—that is more like, the look not the meaning. Pye is a bird too but not ours —— Find the *herb moly* that will help——"

Pye is the first intimation of the π in μονόπωλον. As regards *moly*, Mrs. Verrall points out that this word is found in a passage from Milton's *Comus*, which was the subject for Latin hexameters in the Tripos examination of 1873. Dr. Verrall, however, had completely forgotten this circumstance, and it seems quite unjustifiable to connect it with the "moly" of the script. The latter exactly resembles the other approximations to μονόπωλον —valy, mol, moleskin, etc.—which are given there.

Meanwhile the script continued its evident but not very successful attempts at the words.

September 12th, 1901.

"—μο—ϵς ἑμολϵς mollis —— *Pye* gives one clue, but there is another —— a dark man who smoked—Both were in it—

which of them spoke? not yours. In the long dull room—with candles lighted. *Pale when* that is not sense, but not very wrong.

September 14th, 1901.

"Μοανες that is the old mistake—estote looks like a part. On the wall, *mola* or *molina* is more like. Strange it seems that you cannot read. On the left there are more A V E N T then the word that ends in *es* and something after it —— Pla net or play net. illustre vagatur caelo sine comite [bright it wanders in the sky uncompanioned] palely loitering—I can't get it to-night—wait—you will hear later——"

In the latter script the passage about the uncompanioned planet is perhaps an echo of the one-horse dawn. But with regard to the reproduction of the Greek the progress was small. To forward matters Dr. Verrall, on September 18th, while his wife was writing in one room and he sitting in another, fixed his mind upon the notion of *horse*, the only idea which had so far been entirely absent. That he did not do so in vain, the following script will show:

September 18th, 1901.

"There is a message for her—about a knife—on a table, with letters engraved upon it—not in English [illegible] [one horse] the letters look like that——"

Possibly the reading ought to be εὔιππος, "of goodly horses," but the notion of *horse* had at any rate appeared. But with this nice instance of thought-transference there was put an end to the success of the experiment. Dr. Verrall on September 19th told his wife that in the above writing there was an allusion to a point which he had long looked for, and that when she went to write on the 18th he had fixed upon this point. This communication evidently changed the course of the experiment. The automatic self seems to have been unable to continue its exertions after Mrs. Verrall had learned that they were caused by a living person. The following script is very characteristic:

October 6th, 1901.

"But A. W. V. must be satisfied —— What is the word he

wants to complete. neither you nor I know it. so it is hard to get. It all belongs to him but not to me, his friends but not mine. No one here knows but one & her I have not met. I will ask Arthur——"

It is remarkable to see how the script clings to the belief that it speaks in the name of a deceased person, viz., Myers. As long as Mrs. Verrall thought that it was he who wanted to express certain things by means of her hand, it ran: "How plain it seems to me! but you don't know," etc. But as soon as she had learned that it was her husband who tried to impress her, it was quite another part that was assigned to the alleged communicator. Now it is no longer he who knows the wanting word; now he and Mrs. Verrall are equally in the dark. "What is the word he [A. W. V.] wants to complete?" it now runs: "neither you nor I know it, so it is hard to get." Formerly it was Myers who urged her to write the words; now he does not know them. The automatic self does not shun any inconsistency in order to preserve its leading idea.

It was not, however, until October of the following year, 1902, that Dr. Verrall related the whole experiment to his wife. In the meantime allusions to it had now and again appeared in the script. But now it was evident construction, and no longer anything due to the thoughts of Dr. Verrall. As instances the following writings may be quoted:

November 4th, 1901.

"It is the woman's name your husband wants—it was not Clara—but I see the curve beginning it."

Clara seems to be a reminiscence of *Canticlere* and the other attempts at words beginning with C.

March 10th, 1902.

"Your husband's cocks have gone away, but I will tell more later."

March 27th, 1902.

"*Your husband's thought was good but not complete.* The old man in white was the best part of it but I have not been able to finish that, and now it has all gone away."

The experiment was finished, but a good deal may be

learned from it. A comparison with Miss Ramsden's attempts to receive what Miss Miles strove to transmit shows both resemblance and disparity. The resemblance consists in the difficulty which the automatic writer no less than the waking percipient has in grasping things which really come from outside. As regards this, it seems to make no difference whether the percipient knows that someone tries to impress him, or, as Mrs. Verrall, is ignorant of it. There is a strong contrast between this difficulty and the fluency with which the words flow from the automatist's hand when left to himself. Perhaps one ought always on meeting such a groping, such a desperate struggle to express something which the writer does not even subconsciously seem to know, to stop and ask: "What can be the origin of this that intrudes here upon the psychic's mind?"

The two phenomena further resemble each other therein, that Mrs. Verrall, as well as Miss Ramsden, not only receives impressions of the words and notions which the agent intends to transmit; she dimly discerns other circumstances belonging to the distant episode which her husband had in mind. He had after the translation of the passage from the *Orestes* stood outside the Senate house where the examination took place, and with his friends laughed at the odd phrase "the one-horse dawn." More than once this situation seems to have been discernible to the inner vision of his wife. "He was outside," the script relates on August 20th; and on September 9th: "there were others there, but he knew more than the rest." Of the words themselves it says on September 9th: "It was someone else's words, not his." This is correct, as the words were taken from Euripides. To the examination the script seems to allude on September 12th when it says: "In the long dull room—with candles lighted."

Mrs. Verrall, then, has shown herself not only able to receive impressions supernormally, but clairvoyant, or mind-reading if that term be preferred.

The difference between Miss Ramsden and Mrs. Verrall is mostly due to the circumstance that the latter not only "perceives," but constructs withal. This, and the cause of it, the trance-like and irresponsible state which accompanies the writing, has already been spoken of. Dr. Verrall's experiment has shown that the supernormal perceptions are woven into the dream-like fabrication exactly in the same manner as the automatist's own normal or latent knowledge. They are used to support the idea that the invisible power which employs her hand and puts down words which her brain does not apprehend is some other than herself.

This idea is the life-principle in Mrs. Verrall's writing. When she addresses herself by *you*, she does not see that the one who does so is another part of her own self. But is it, after having followed Dr. Verrall's experiment through its different phases, possible to doubt this? Is it possible to doubt that when, for instance, the script says: "A. W. V. will understand—I think of him when I say it. You do not know," it is the lucid part of her mind, to quote Sir Oliver Lodge,[1] that thinks of Dr. Verrall, while her normal self ignores that he is concerned with the matter? But this kind of dramatic play between the writer and her automatic self is throughout characteristic of Mrs. Verrall's script, and confirmed her belief in its being another person who wrote. At the outset, her hand refused to put the name of that other person under the messages. Once even her own initials were written under the words spoken to herself: "Can't you see? Can't you believe? M. de G. V." A battle seems to be fought between her subconscious knowledge and the belief of her waking self; but the latter gains the victory, and many communications are signed with the names of Frederic Myers or other departed persons.

[1] See above, p. 41.

CHAPTER V

THE SYMPOSIUM INCIDENT

A SHORT time before the death of Frederic Myers and the commencement of her own automatic writing, Mrs. Verrall had made the acquaintance of another lady-automatist, Mrs. Forbes (pseudonym). The script of the latter, which was partly produced by means of planchette, was thought by her to originate from her son Talbot (pseudonym) who had been killed in the South African war in the beginning of the year 1900, and from Edmund Gurney who had been known to her personally. From February, 1901, Myers, who had been also known to her, was added to these. The state of Mrs. Forbes, also when she produced direct script, was less unconscious than that of Mrs. Verrall; she understood what she wrote, and sometimes completed the words by guesses; it was, however, always carefully noted down when such was the case.

A couple of months after becoming acquainted with Mrs. Verrall, on February 24th, 1901, Mrs. Forbes obtained at her house in the north of England in planchette-writing what turned out to be a correct description of Mrs. Verrall's contemporaneous situation in Cambridge. The first words were: "Edmund Gurney writes for Myers[1]——let us see our friends in Cambridge. Mrs. Verrall is so strongly my friend that I can be with her." Planchette then said that she was sitting in a chair near the fire, very comfortable, and added: "but don't ask me to look over her shoulder, for I can't see that she has got a book."

Mrs. Verrall at the time was sitting in a low chair near

[1] This communicator is throughout Mrs. Verrall's report designated by the initial *H*.

the fire, close to her husband's chair ; they were together looking over a typewritten manuscript of an article which she had written ; her attitude and occupation were suggestive of reading, but she held no book.

On March 4th Mrs. Verrall had a letter from Mrs. Forbes giving the full account of this incident. The next day she obtained her first script with real words. She herself thinks that there is possibly a connection between Mrs. Forbes's letter where the names of her supposed communicators were given, and the marked improvement in her own script.

At any rate, the connection with Mrs. Forbes became of much importance in the next period. On March 17th Mrs. Verrall's script contained the following words in Latin :

" What is more difficult, not to say impossible, unless you also wish it ? To-day I can, not without doubt. Write ' we are in Diana's allegiance.' Note it again."

The reference is to a poem of Catullus ; but *Diana* is the Christian name of Mrs. Forbes, and Mrs. Verrall took the words to be a message from the persons writing through this lady. In themselves they do not seem to contain anything to support such an assumption. But gradually there developed between the two automatists a faculty of influencing each other supernormally which recalls the relations between Miss Ramsden and Miss Miles. These are described by Miss Miles as follows[1] : " There seems," says she, " an invisible cord attached to Miss Ramsden. When the power is once fairly started she seems to get any message whether I am thinking of her or not. It seems to go on the whole time." At other times, on the contrary, they " cannot get into touch at all." With this the following account by Mrs. Verrall ought to be compared : " On January 11th, 1902, I noted in my diary that I had felt on the day before that ' after an interval I had again come into touch ' with whatever

[1] *Proceedings* Am. S.P.R., Vol. V., p. 688.

it was that produced my automatic script—— On January 10th, Mrs. Forbes automatically wrote a long message for me from 'Edmund' which I received after I had made the above-mentioned entry in my diary. Neither the subjective impression nor the contents of the script are definite enough to be evidential. But the coincidence between the reference to me after three weeks' silence and my own sensation of having 'come into touch' is worth noting." It seems then as if Mrs. Verrall could feel that Mrs. Forbes was once more engaged with thoughts of her. No doubt she herself took her sensation to mean more than this; but the "message" has evidently contained nothing to sustain her belief. If it cannot be supported in other ways, the parallel to the Miles-Ramsden cases must give the precedence to the purely human interpretation.

In the planchette-writing of February 24th, Mrs. Forbes had shown a supernormal power to perceive the surroundings of Mrs. Verrall of which several instances occur in the time following. Essentially it did not differ from that displayed by Miss Ramsden and other sensitives. Sometimes it had the character of a faculty to obtain impressions about something which occupied Mrs. Verrall, at other times it was of a more visionary nature. No doubt it was further developed through experiments made by the two ladies simultaneously trying for automatic script, and the like.

This faculty of Mrs. Forbes became important in the following case which in its way is as instructive as the experiment of Dr. Verrall. "The Symposium incident" presents an instance of subconscious fabrication which must be acknowledged as such because it led to an actual event, *viz.*, the opening of a sealed letter left by Frederic Myers, by which its real nature was unveiled. But the part played by Mrs. Forbes as co-operating at a certain point was a phenomenon which might well confirm Mrs. Verrall's belief in the genuineness of her own script.

The incident, however, had a prelude which had nothing to do with Mrs. Forbes.

On May 31st, 1901, Mrs. Verrall's script among other things contained the phrase "Diotima gave the clue." Mrs. Verrall states that she knew at that time nothing about Diotima except that she was the one woman in the Platonic dialogues, and that she was mentioned in the *Symposium*. The dialogue itself she had never read, and had very little conscious knowledge of its contents.

No doubt it does not in itself require a special explanation that Mrs. Verrall's script, which so often refers to classical subjects, mentioned a name from Plato which she at any rate knew. A possible ground for its emergence just at this point may, however, be adduced. Diotima is mentioned in Myers's work, *Human Personality and its Survival of Bodily Death*, which was just then going through the press. The proofs were in Mrs. Myers's house at Cambridge where Mrs. Verrall was a frequent visitor in the spring and summer of 1901. It is therefore, as she herself states, not impossible that she should have seen, without consciously noticing, the passage which contains the name Diotima. She corrected the proofs of a portion of the book, and must doubtless have been near the remaining part.

Nay it may even be contended that it is not only possible, but all but certain that such was the cause of the mention of Diotima in the script. At a later time, but before the publication of the book, Mrs. Verrall expressed through the script her belief that the passage in question was to be found in it. This already intimates that she had without knowing seen the passage. But, moreover, the script of this period contains a case pointing in the same direction. When Mrs. Verrall had written of Diotima, she wanted to learn more about her; so, on June 1st, she looked up in the *Symposium* the passage where Socrates says that Diotima, the prophetess, had said that Love (Eros) was a spirit (daimon) and mediator between God and man. The speech of Socrates comes

immediately after Agathon's panegyric of Love, at the end of which are introduced two hexameter lines containing the phrases "calm [γαλήνη] on the sea, and "stillness [νηνεμίαν] of winds." Mrs. Verrall herself thinks that she may unconsciously have seen these lines on the day when she read about Diotima. Later she automatically wrote as follows:

June 27th, 1901.

"Quid coerces nenymon γαληνων ρώμην [why dost thou stay the might of the windless calm].

September 28th, 1901.

"Noenymus νηνεμος ἐστι γαλήνη [windless is the calm].

December 12th, 1901.

"Nenymos γαληνη —is the word but there is more —— It is Greek but written in English letters—two words are plain. I think there is something more. This is not your husband's word—he wants a word but more than a name."

The latter script shows that Agathon's words from the *Symposium*, which have nothing whatever to do with the Diotima incident save that they precede the passage which Mrs. Verrall looked up, had become for the automatist a part of the usual notion of something that was to be found and supplemented, *i.e.*, the notion that her impressions came from outside. Possibly the unconscious groping for Dr. Verrall's phrase had taught the automatic self to grope for words and seek for clues generally. But when the idea of the "windless calm" undoubtedly had come to Mrs. Verrall by a casual glance at something which did not reach her waking consciousness, it is highly probable that the same had been the case with the Diotima passage in the proofs of Myers's book, which had at any rate been in her immediate proximity.[1]

The Symposium incident's real history, however, does not begin until November 26th, 1902, a year and a half after the mention of Diotima in the script. It happened

[1] *Cf.* Mrs. Myers's remarks about the proofs of *Fragments from Prose and Poetry*, to which other allusions in Mrs. Verrall's script of the same period seem due (*Proceedings* S.P.R., Vol. XXVI., p. 229).

that the Diotima passage from the *Symposium* had been set for translation by a lecturer at Trinity College, Cambridge, and that Mrs. Verrall was in the habit of using the Trinity College translation papers for her class at Newnham College. On account of this she read on November 26th in the dialogue the context of the passage, and on November 27th looked over some ten or twelve translations of it. " During these two days," she writes, " my mind was full of the passage, of the reference to it earlier in my script, and of the appropriateness of its selection."

By the last phrase Mrs. Verrall means the appropriateness of the selection of the passage by *Myers* as a message on May 31st of the preceding year. When she could make so much of the bare mention of the name Diotima in her script, it is no wonder that the subsequent development of the case must impress her greatly. For those acquainted with the final result it must of course appear in another light.

At this point Mrs. Forbes's receptiveness for impressions concerning Mrs. Verrall had reached no small proportions, and she had given several proofs of supernormal knowledge about her doings and preoccupations. It had been agreed between the two automatists that Mrs. Verrall ought to receive all of Mrs. Forbes's script which the writer thought referred to her, while on the contrary, Mrs. Forbes never saw the other's script nor learned anything whatever about her opinion of her own. Consequently she knew nothing about the references to Diotima or the *Symposium*. At the same time she of course knew that Mrs. Verrall like herself was interested in Myers, and hoped that her script had him partially for its source. The importance of ascertaining this by means of some test must likewise be clear to her. With this in mind it is not difficult to understand that she could produce the following scripts :

November 26th, 1902.

" Myers opens a book long closed.

November 27th, 1902.

" Will it be worth while to try to follow the clue of yesterday ? Myers wishes Mrs. Verrall to open the last book she read for him in which is the true word of the test. If she will try to begin the sentence with this word he will be sure to prove his being the writer—let the letter be sent to-night."

On the other hand, a supernormal element probably intervenes. In view of the relations between the two sensitives it is very likely that Mrs. Forbes has had a vague perception of the matter which occupied Mrs. Verrall during the same days—a book in which was a word that was perhaps a test. But a real conformity is wanting ; on the base of what is in itself a correct impression, something wholly wrong or nonsensical has been constructed. It was wrong to speak about a book which Mrs. Verrall had read for Myers. And even if we accept an interpretation which Mrs. Verrall favours, and take the phrase " open the last book she read for him " to mean " open for him the last book she read," *viz.*, the *Symposium*, the result did not confirm that the instruction to find a word there and begin a sentence with it came from Myers. As proceeding from him the script is irrelevant ; as built on an impression about the preoccupation of Mrs. Verrall it is comprehensible and interesting.

Mrs. Verrall, however, was much struck with its contents which seemed so clearly connected with her own thoughts at the time of its production. She tried now if, by fixing her mind upon the *Symposium* before trying for automatic script, she could obtain further instructions ; but this attempt met with no success. On the other hand, the script told her already on November 28th that " it must come elsewhere " ; and her belief in this has possibly had a stimulating effect on Mrs. Forbes, whose subsequent script clearly reflects the ideas which filled her co-operator—Diotima, Eros, the *Symposium*. She writes as follows :

December 18th, 1902.

" . . . word . . . Myers make it— . . . with the—Dionysus (?)[1] *Dion*— . . .

[1] A query indicates that part of the word is a guess.

" Edmund writes to tell the friend—who writes with Talbot —word of the Test will be Dy . . . Will you give the sense of the message. Write to Mrs. Verrall and say the word will be found in Myers own . . . will you send a message to Mrs. Verrall to say Myers will see with[1] her on Friday [*December 19th*]—will you be so kind as to send this to-day ?

" . . . Talbot writes to say you can be sure . . . it is one of the most Hymeneal Songs—Love's oldest melody.

January 6th, 1903.

" . . . son . . . son suspuro suspiro sryseo sym on Myers eros."

Moreover, on January 11th, Mrs. Forbes, who did not know Greek, produced the following letters : ω, ϵ, ρ, σ, φ, ς, α, which were described as part of an uncompleted test.

It is not to be wondered at that Mrs. Verrall after this apparent confirmation of her belief in " Diotima " as a message sent by Myers produced one script after another full of allusions to the co-operation of Mrs. Forbes, and to the book of Myers, which was about to be published. It began after she had received Mrs. Forbes's script of December 18th.

December 19th, 1902.

" In the sealed book is the word, the message to men, the new and old Diatesseron.

December 26th, 1902.

" Mrs. Forbes will get the words I want, but wait, happy is the hour, let your thoughts follow her, do not write.

January 14th, 1903.

" Mrs. Forbes has sent it to you—or should have by now ; she has got nearer and will get the word. Write more often this month—we can do more now for you. Your husband's test goes forward, Mrs. Forbes gets that better than you do—write regularly—there will be news for you to write next week —good news before the month is out. The book will help—our word is there contained.

January 21st, 1903.

" Wait for the word from Mrs. Forbes ——

January 22nd, 1903.

" In Myers' book is a word that ought to make things plain—read it to see—not at the head of a chapter—but quoted in the text—it should have been—and surely is.

[1] This expression is in Mrs. Forbes's script the usual equivalent for " communicate with " or " write by means of."

January 23rd, 1903.
" Read the book for me. Look there for the helping word.

January 25th, 1903.
" Between God and Man is the δαιμονιόν τι—you will see that quoted in the book—Love is the bond.

January 31st, 1903.
" Look for what I have told you in the book—Myers' book. The passage is important ' To the ends of the earth.' That is the countersign."

As may be seen, there is nothing supernormal in all this. It is simply an expression of Mrs. Verrall's belief that the Diotima passage was to be found in Myers's book, whose publication she awaited in much excitement. She is, however, not blind to the fact that it is herself who at times speaks in the script. She points out, for instance, with regard to the remark on January 22nd : " not at the head of a chapter," that she had corrected for press a slip consisting of a list of quotations for the headings of the chapters, adding : " Hence no doubt the allusion in the script." Other things in the script characterize themselves as fabrications because they are wrong ; such a one is the remark on January 14th on Dr. Verrall's test ; it neither went forward nor had anything to do with Mrs. Forbes ; and the phrase at the end of the script of January 31st, about the important passage " To the ends of the earth " ; it was not found in Myers's book.

But the Diotima passage was really found in *Human Personality*. It is argued above that Mrs. Verrall had seen it unconsciously in the proofs in the spring of 1901, and had thus throughout had a latent knowledge thereof. But for herself this explanation hardly existed as a possibility. The genuineness of her script became for her almost indisputable when she found on looking over the book on February 10th, 1903, that Myers in its first volume " gives an abstract of the ' cosmical ' aspect of Love, as described by Plato in the *Symposium*, calling special attention to the fact that this utterance is placed by Plato in the mouth of Diotima, the prophetess."

With this apparent success the first chapter of the

Symposium incident ends. Only Mrs. Forbes, who normally knew nothing about the whole matter, continued to dwell on the *Symposium*. She writes :

February 20th, 1903.
" All we write is really S Y M P—a the tic (?)
March 2nd, 1903.
" Write to Mrs. Verrall to say the word we want to send her to-day is sympathy come y—— Ερως [?] love [?].
April 1st, 1903.
" S y m p athy —— Seal s ym p athy write this."

The word *seal*, though, in the last script is possibly due to a new impression from Mrs. Verrall. And its appearance in Mrs. Forbes's script together with the attempt at *symposium* might well confirm the former's belief that it was Myers who continued to use the hand of her fellow-automatist. Apart from this contribution Mrs. Forbes, however, had no part in the further development of the Symposium case.

Mrs. Verrall's script, on the contrary, had only two days after the appearance of *Human Personality* continued in a new line.

Several years before his death, in 1891, Frederic Myers had given into the charge of Sir Oliver Lodge a sealed envelope which was to be opened after his death if some medium produced a communication about its contents in a manner that made it probable that it came from him.

It was with the contents of this envelope that Mrs. Verrall's script after the success with the Diotima passage began to occupy itself. The automatist herself is of opinion that she may unconsciously have been led to think of this envelope by her script of December 19th, 1902 : " In the sealed book is the word " ; to the impression which the word *sealed* made on her subconsciousness all the following utterances about Myers's sealed envelope might be due. But although she was willing in this case, where the result proved that the communications did not proceed from the alleged source, to ascribe them to herself, she did not from thence draw any conclusion with regard

to the remaining script. And yet there seems to be no essential difference between other " messages " and those referring to the sealed envelope. For the estimation of Mrs. Verrall's script as a whole it is therefore very useful to thoroughly study this case.

During the first two months after the publication of Myers's book the following scripts were written :

February 12th, 1903.

" Hodgson will help . . . The key of the box is in a little drawer upstairs —— The metal box is heavy not very small —not a cash box to carry. The letter is tied with thread and there is a word stamped on the seal,—not a figure—a word of 4 letters.

February 22nd, 1903.

" Direct Leaf and Pitherington to see open the chest and this is the order of the rite—Seal green and irregular has a word across it in an oval little print letters in English. Truth, Light—no not those—Love you mistake—that is not outside —you do not hear.

March 17th, 1903.

" Two high windows, with dark curtains—looking on a street—and a table with a red cloth. The writing table is in that room and the key in its drawer would fit —— Ask Hodgson too—

March 20th, 1903.

" Now something else. You must find that drawer and get the key. Then things will be plain. There are papers inside and you will not find mine at once, you must look for it. The seal is quite irregular—ragged in outline ——

March 26th, 1903.

" The device on the seal is distinctive—get that first [*drawing of oval seal*] four letters ʌS ɔʃ like that. pairs [*scrawls*] no you don't understand. It is on the seal. an oval shaped seal. with four letters on it—*Roma* or amor perhaps—not a figure but a word with a meaning. Inside is the sentence you know—but it is not in Greek—it is in English letters—It is the word of the simposium—and the greatest of these is Charity is like it—but the word is Love—Crosst amor.

April 19th, 1903.

" [*Drawing of oval seal*] sigillum. The envelope is square square and white —— Go to the box for it—it lies there with others and is not on the top. The paper inside is folded once. The box has a handle on the middle of the top,—a sunken handle. There is some double locking—two keys are wanted

—the small one and one on a bunch. *Orotava* or something like that is the password Life is more like the word on the seal. L I F E there is a little frame round of double lines. Is not this enough? The seal—the box—the 2 keys in different places—the dark house & high windows the box and something green."

Mrs. Verrall had thus gradually written down a great many particulars which she thought referred to Myers's envelope. It is true that most of them were quite unimportant, as regards the test; others were self-contradictory; now it is Dr. Leaf and Mr. Piddington who ought to open the chest, now the assistance of Dr. Hodgson—who was in America—is invoked. However, on March 26th the script had clearly stated the main point. "Inside is the sentence you know," it ran, "it is the word of the Symposium—the word is Love." To be sure, this was a rather likely guess. Possibly Mrs. Forbes's script of March 2nd had its share in it; Mrs. Verrall, of course, did not consider it an echo of the preceding ones.

On April 17th Mrs. Verrall's script had given a very clear description of a box in a bank as the place where the letter was kept. This agreed with the normal knowledge of the automatist; Sir Oliver Lodge had, in fact, deposited Myers's sealed envelope in a bank. But on the other hand the script had mentioned Hodgson, and Mrs. Verrall therefore thought that it did not at all refer to the envelope in Sir Oliver's charge, but to some other letter left with Dr. Hodgson. The allusions on April 17th to the password, "*Orotava* or something like that," also pointed to Dr. Hodgson; the exertions to produce a particular word were continued for some time in the script and were in fact connected with Dr. Hodgson, as will be seen later on. But they had not, as believed by Mrs. Verrall, any connection with a Myers envelope.

Mrs. Verrall's belief in such a connection was, however, displayed in the following script:

August 18th, 1903.

"The box that I told of stands on a chair, squared with metal clamps—yellowish wood. It is near a window. Hodgson

expects a message about it before he will open it—you have sent part of the word to him but not all. The word you should send is the name of a ship—Orinaria Orellaria, like that. It ends in—ia. The message inside is from the Symposium the passage you know——"

After this most clear intimation of Dr. Hodgson being the keeper of the envelope with the Symposium-passage, Mrs. Verrall wrote to him telling him of the description of the box. In his reply, dated September 17th, 1903, he told her that he knew nothing of any box like that described, and had no sealed envelope left him for posthumous reading.

Mrs. Verrall's subsequent script contained among other things divers messages that purported to come from Professor Sidgwick who died in the year 1900. As a consequence hereof, the subject of an envelope left by him with his wife was introduced, though such a one does not seem to have existed. References to this envelope and to that of Myers were mixed in a confused manner. In the script it was now Myers and now Professor Sidgwick who held the conversation.

September 22nd, 1903.

"In his [*i.e.* Myers's] envelope is a drawing, a curved line, on one side of the paper, and a word or two on the other side . . . Σιγμα stands for Sidgwick elsewhere, why not there too? But you must give another message correctly first and then ask her to open my envelope.

January 17th, 1904.

"S is the letter. S in the envelope S and on a seal. Σ. In Mrs. Sidgwick's letter a Σ—and three words on the paper—not without hope. The question is answered. This must succeed—the other is harder——

July 13th, 1904.

"I have long told you of the contents of the envelope. Myers' sealed envelope left with Lodge. You have not understood. It has in it the words from the Symposium—about Love bridging the chasm. They are written on a piece of single paper—folded and put in an envelope. That is inside another envelope which has my initial at the bottom, left hand and there is a date on the envelope too, the outside envelope not in my writing. The whole thing has been put with other papers in a box a small box clamped with metal.

July 15th, 1904.

"It would be important that Hodgson should see the box opened—with the double envelope. His own may wait.

July 18th, 1904.

"Let the trial be made as they desire—this is clear—that the passage from the Symposium which you have found as was told you in the book is in an envelope, sealed by me. I should like Hodgson to know this but it is not in his envelope. I wrote the words some time before the book was ready—perhaps the test is not very good, but it should help.

August 14th, 1904.

"And in one envelope the reference to Love in the other to Hope. And you will not look—Faith is not yours. Though I speak with the tongue of an angel, you have not heard or hearing have not done. *Surely this is plain.*

November 25th, 1904.

"Why will you not look for it. Tell them that. Long have they waited we do not know why—but can do no more."

In the face of such earnest appeals—which Mrs. Verrall did not realize came from one part of her own self while another part was sceptical—it seemed at last right to yield. The many contradictory statements, nay mistakes of the script—among which were the references to an envelope left with Dr. Hodgson that continued in spite of Mrs. Verrall's knowledge to the contrary—were overlooked. The sealed envelope entrusted by Frederic Myers to Sir Oliver Lodge was opened in the rooms of the Society for Psychical Research in London on December 13th, 1904, and proved to contain a sentence bearing no resemblance to the phrase from the *Symposium* which Mrs. Verrall's script had led her to expect.

Such was the end of this incident which has presented a unique opportunity to substantiate the subliminal power of construction. Herewhere circumstances made it possible to compare the statements of the script to an actual fact, it became evident that the script was fiction. Apart from "Diotima" that was doubtless due to latent memory, the whole series of "messages" proved to be nothing but subconscious fabrication. Not even Mrs. Forbes had influenced the script supernormally; as Mrs. Verrall read her writings, the impulses due to them were conveyed to

her in a wholly normal manner. Judging by this incident, Mrs. Verrall's automatism would seem to be exactly of the same type as those mediums who were the subject of Professor Flournoy's studies. Cryptomnesia and imagination suffice to explain all.

From Dr. Verrall's experiment, however, it appeared that she was capable of receiving impressions transmitted to her by a "willing agent." In the sequel it will be proved that her susceptibility went further than this; that faculty of obtaining impressions without a willing agent which Mrs. Forbes displayed in the Symposium case, Mrs. Verrall herself possessed in no less a degree.

CHAPTER VI

CROSS-CORRESPONDENCES WITH MRS. FORBES

THE results of a supernormal relation between two sensitives, or two automatists, like that which was in the Symposium case seen to exist between Mrs. Verrall and Mrs. Forbes, have in psychical research obtained the name of cross-correspondences. It is used in a narrower sense about the appearance in the scripts of two automatists of the same, or similar, words or notions, and in a wider sense about all veridical impressions which one of them receives concerning the other. Mrs. Verrall employs it in the latter sense when speaking of her "cross-correspondences with Mrs. Forbes." But she reports also those cases where her script refers to Mrs. Forbes, and *vice-versa*, but where the reference does not correspond to any fact. Her paper, she says, is a record, not of successes, but of incidents.

A classification of these incidents would show that they constitute two groups of about equal size of which one may be called successes. On the whole, there will here be reason to dwell on the latter group only; but I will cite a few failures which throw light on the entire process. This for instance applies to a number of allusions in Mrs. Verrall's script to the assistance she will get from Mrs. Forbes:

March 11th, 1903.

"Mrs. Forbes has got the other word and will send it—not Symposium but it helps and is clear. I don't think she knows it is for you but you will understand.

March 15th, 1903.

"Mrs. Forbes is slow but she has something which you have not seen.

July 17th, 1903.

"Mrs. Forbes has something which should settle the date—it fills your gap."

The last phrase, "it fills your gap," has many parallels which will be mentioned later; Mrs. Verrall during the growth of her collaboration with Mrs. Forbes had conceived the not unnatural idea that the "controls" gave through one of them what they could not produce through the other. But in none of the above cited cases was the assurance of the script based on any reality; Mrs. Forbes's writings contained nothing that referred to Mrs. Verrall. And other incidents confirm the conception that it was the automatists themselves who had invented this romance about their co-operation under extra-terrestrial influence. For instance, Mrs. Forbes in the summer of 1904 wrote the following which, as Mrs. Verrall says, "suggested that some episode was now closed and that some distinct success had been accomplished":

July 16th, 1904.

"Our dream of our own home will soon be realized. All is written to the end of the first chapter. I was overjoyed—our friends were here; all I felt was great joy; all I knew was the end of the first chapter seemed come, with the next page began the real story. Send Mrs. Verrall this message. The end of the first chapter has come—all will be ready for the next which begins—over the page . . . great joy sympathy."

It is not impossible that this "message" which expressly mentions Mrs. Verrall is founded on a supernormal impression of her conscious or unconscious sensations. She had had a great success when the appearance of *Human Personality* confirmed the statements of her script about the Diotima passage which was to be found there. Now she was filled with thoughts of that which seemed to be the next chapter of the same story, the assurances in the script that the same passage from the *Symposium* was contained in Myers's sealed envelope. But even if Mrs. Forbes's writing reflected the feelings of Mrs. Verrall, it was, as we know, anything but consistent with the real circumstances.

Instructive in another way is a case where Mrs. Forbes appeared unable to be influenced by Mrs. Verrall's thoughts. After the failure with regard to the Myers envelope, Mrs. Verrall's script repeatedly assured her that the incident would be mentioned through Mrs. Forbes, who normally knew nothing of the proposal to open the envelope, nor of the event of December 13th, 1904. Mrs. Verrall wrote :

December 21st, 1904.

" I will send a message about this through Mrs. Forbes—do not ask for it it may take time.

December 28th, 1904.

" Six days you must wait from now and other three—then the message will make things clear. Let it come then. I want to confirm it through Mrs. Forbes but she has not understood. I want her to write and sympathize with the failure and not to know what it is. I shall try all this week—wait for her letter and help. Think of her often, send a message to her in mind to write and say she is sure you are disappointed.

January 6th, 1905.

" Mrs. Forbes has been anxious this week but the anxiety is less now. I could not make her hear what I wanted her to write to you—but ask to see what she wrote on Monday."

How clearly does the script express the desires of Mrs. Verrall ! How evident is her need of a word from Myers which might neutralize the effect of the envelope failure and restore the certainty that they were in communication with him ! But when she wrote to Mrs. Forbes, this lady replied that she had written no script on the preceding Monday nor had she had any special impression about Mrs. Verrall or the opening of an envelope. In vain had the latter, in accordance with the request in her own script, tried to impress her with a sense of her disappointment. As has been pointed out before, and as will often be seen, it seems more difficult for a sensitive to catch those things which an agent is eagerly striving to transmit than the ideas that more or less unconsciously fill his mind.

The incidents that deserve the name of successes

consist on the whole in Mrs. Forbes obtaining during the production of her script veridical impressions about Mrs. Verrall, and *vice versâ*. In Mrs. Forbes's script these impressions are most often clothed in words which indicate that it is a discarnate, especially Myers, who tells her about the situation which is described. A case, of February 24th, 1901, has been mentioned above; Myers has seen Mrs. Verrall sitting in a chair near the fire, possibly reading, though he cannot see any book. Altogether more than a dozen times things that correspond to a real situation are found in Mrs. Forbes's script. I reproduce some of the clearest cases.

November 25th, 1901.

"[Mrs. Verrall was to be told] that the friends were with her when she was with Mrs. Sidgwick."

On November 22nd Mrs. Verrall's script had produced an attempt to represent a communication from Mrs. Sidgwick's deceased brother, which attempt had impressed the automatist a good deal. The phrase in Mrs. Forbes's script seems to reflect her attitude of mind between the 22nd and 25th.

December 16th, 1901.

"Mrs. Verrall to try to see for Myers. Myers says—to say friends can wait is far from courteous . . .would it seem fair for the spirits to sit for work for hours [while ?] she sat with foolish . . ."[1]

Mrs. Verrall had by arrangement with Mrs. Forbes for some days tried the experiment of writing every day at a fixed hour. But during a visit at a friend's house she was to her annoyance prevented from keeping the appointment both on December 14th and 15th. On the 16th she wrote to Mrs. Forbes that she must abandon the experiment. The latter had not known that she was away from home, but had felt convinced that she wrote every day. The remark of her script "she sat with foolish" closely represented Mrs. Verrall's own feeling of annoyance

[1] Dots in Mrs. Forbes's script indicate illegible words.

that she had been occupied in conversation when she ought to have been writing.

November 2nd, 1902.

" Tell Mrs. Verrall to be sure I am the writer—the friend was with her when she sat *On* the *old* seat (?) when she felt for (?) . . . in the dark she tried to find the *Old*—with sympathy, Myers."

On October 27th and 31st Mrs. Verrall had before writing sat for some fifteen minutes in the dark, concentrating her thoughts on Frederic Myers. She imagined him sitting on the corner of the seat in the drawing-room, where he always sat when he called. There was a moment on the 27th when she had so clear a mental image of him that she found herself looking towards the seat as if he were actually sitting there. The case recalls Miss Miles's efforts to visualize when wanting to transmit an idea to Miss Ramsden.

January 20th, 1903.

" Myers writes to say Verrall . . . Verrall saw with Myers on Sunday . . . Mrs. Verrall was with Myers on Sunday when he (or she) sat with Mr. . . ."

Mrs. Verrall had on Sunday, January 18th, before writing fixed her attention on talks with Frederic Myers on certain days in 1900.

January 25th, 1903, 6.30 p.m.

" You can tell her that Myers sat with her—when she sat still in the . . . Mr. Verrall's room—with . . . on her . . . Mr. Verrall Dr. Verrall was with own work—say work work of . . . Let us see first the Cambridge writer—on the chair lies the Paper—the work is done . . . no word Myers will ever see . . . it is too far for you to travel."

Dr. Verrall finished a paper on the afternoon of January 25th, and put it when finished on a chair beside him. His wife by appointment had been writing simultaneously with Mrs. Forbes, but her script contained no reference to that lady.

February 23rd, 1903, 6 p.m.

[*Planchette-writing*] " Tell Mrs. Verrall to take care—to go—Hove when she is visiting Brighton A L F R E D. Tell

Mrs. Verrall Myers sees with a trouble of which he cannot speak—you will know—when he writes—Hove."

For some days Mrs. Verrall had been much occupied with a trouble connected with the illness of the daughter of a friend of hers whose Christian name was Alfred, and who was living at Hove, near Brighton. Neither Mrs. Forbes nor another lady, Mrs. Baltimore, who assisted at the planchette-writing, knew anything of this friend.

Mrs. Verrall by arrangement sat for automatic writing simultaneously with Mrs. Forbes and Mrs. Baltimore. Towards 6.30 p.m. she fell asleep for a moment; when she awoke, her script went on: "It has helped them and you will get a message now plain to read. Send this to her." Here then the influence seems to have been reciprocal—*i.e.*, Mrs. Verrall got the veridical impression that Mrs. Forbes's script contained something referring to her. But of course the utterance is so vague, that it may be due simply to a guess.

June 30th, 1903.

"Mrs. Verrall is trying to see with Brighton friends who send the letter to be read. Myers writes with sympathy."

At the end of June, or quite early in July, at least before July 3rd, Mrs. Verrall received in Switzerland news from Brighton of a very serious illness of a relative. If it was really not until July, Mrs. Forbes may have got the impression from a presentiment or expectation in Mrs. Verrall. But the reference is too indefinite for attributing much importance to the case.

The supernormal knowledge about Mrs. Forbes which is displayed in Mrs. Verrall's script was in many cases ascribed to the former's deceased son Talbot. The first veridical impression which she at all obtained about her collaborator, seems connected with the following script which Mrs. Forbes had written a few hours earlier with Talbot as the alleged communicator.

August 28th, 1901.

"I am looking for a sensitive who writes to tell Father to

believe I can write through you . . . I have to sit with our friend Edmund to control the sensitive."

It was doubtless a deep desire with Mrs. Forbes which had here gained expression through her automatic script; contrary to Mrs. Verrall after the envelope failure, she did not, however, make any conscious effort to influence her colleague. In the evening of the same day Mrs. Verrall wrote in Latin as follows:

"Sign with the seal. The fir-tree that has already been planted in the garden gives its own portent."

[*signed*]

The two drawings in the middle are supposed to represent a sword and a suspended bugle. Now a suspended bugle, surmounted by a crown, was the badge of the regiment to which the deceased Talbot had belonged. Besides, Mrs. Forbes had in her garden four or five small fir trees grown from seed sent from abroad by him and called by her Talbot's trees. Both facts were entirely unknown to Mrs. Verrall. Perhaps, then, Mrs. Forbes's wish that her son would manifest through another sensitive had really left its trace in these dim perceptions of things which in the mother's thoughts were connected with him.

From the alleged Talbot came also the following communication, obtained with planchette by Mrs. Verrall and her daughter.

May 4th, 1902.

"My mother has had a wounded man to stay with her. Will not tell you his name. Want you to tell my mother my message."

A man who had been very bad with sciatica, and was still suffering and limping, stayed with Mrs. Forbes from May 3rd to 5th.

In the summer of 1902, Mrs. Verrall's script contained veridical references to "Talbot's lilies" in Mrs. Forbes's garden. An attempt, however, which Mrs. Forbes herself made to impress her with the idea of the said lilies, was a failure.

The next script with a possible reference to Talbot is the following, written in Latin:

January 9th, 1904.

"Nevertheless consolation for the same grief will concern (?) neither me nor you—you ought to receive it from others: after the seventh day you will be able to understand everything."

On the seventh day, *i.e.*, on January 16th, Mrs. Verrall received a letter from Mrs. Forbes whose script had told her to ask for the last week's writings. As the above was the only piece which Mrs. Verrall had produced during the week in question, she sent her a copy of it. In reply Mrs. Forbes told her that January 6th was the anniversary of her son's death and that her own script on January 5th had begun a message of consolation to her which was left incomplete, and had then suggested that Mrs. Verrall had some answer to send.

It seems, then, not improbable that Mrs. Verrall's somewhat mysterious utterances on January 9th about consolation were due to an impression about the feelings of Mrs. Forbes in the preceding days.

In the following cases Mrs. Verrall's supernormal knowledge about things concerning Mrs. Forbes appears without connection with Talbot or others:

February 2nd, 1903.

"Harriet de Vane with another."

The two automatists had as was often the case sat simultaneously by arrangement. Mrs. Forbes had in her room where she was writing a pastel drawing of her great-grandmother by Harriet de Vim.

July 31st, 1903.

"The picture in the picture-frame—upon the wall—and no name upon it—in her room. Ask Mrs. Forbes. She has thought lately of the picture, and will remember —— Go into the gallery at Venice——"

Mrs. Forbes had lately put a tiny sketch of Venice into a frame. There was no name on the sketch. The picture was not hung, but was resting against the wall in the drawing-room. The mention of Venice, though, may be due to the knowledge of Mrs. Verrall that Mrs. Forbes was going to Italy in August, and not to any perception of the sketch.

October 6th, 1903.

"Mrs. Forbes comes home this week —— She has had a success while she was away—ask about it. Her mother will want her much this winter—she will be in the south."

The statement about the success corresponded to Mrs. Forbes's own feeling; at Venice there came to her an impression which explained some things unintelligible hitherto.

The last statement also proved to be correct. On November 30th, 1903, Mrs. Forbes told Mrs. Verrall that her mother was ill. Mrs. Verrall did not mention her script of October 6th. On December 2nd Mrs. Forbes was called to her mother's house in the south, whence she wrote to Mrs. Verrall, saying that she would have to stay a long time away from home.

As regards Mrs. Verrall, the following case is of a different type from the others:

October 16th, 1904, 10.30 p.m.

"Tell this. In the fire-lighted room she and the dog alone, and the thought came to her as she held up the screen before the fire—and the dog stirred in his sleep—he felt that I was there. It was only for a moment—but the scene was plain. *Will this meet your point? It is all that I can do to-night.*"

As she finished her script, Mrs. Verrall had a mental impression of Mrs. Forbes sitting in her drawing-room,

with the door into the greenhouse open; through that door a shadowy figure, which she knew to be Talbot, came and stood looking at Mrs. Forbes.

Mrs. Verrall had on the same day had a letter from Mrs. Forbes who told her of a script she had produced on October 14th, wherein was made the suggestion that her colleague should sit on Sunday, October 16th, to obtain "some story scene or episode." "Tell Mrs. Verrall," it continued, "we will send the scene to her . . . write this message I will send the scene to Mrs. Verrall to be read by you. E. G." Afterwards, on October 16th, at 5.45 p.m., Mrs. Forbes wrote as follows:

"Gurney . . . write to you . . . from Cambridge G . . . you will be written to for a test is being given—a very strong evidence——Gurney will be sure to give Mrs. Verrall a . . ."

This, though, is but a repetition of the announcement in her former script,—that Gurney would give a test which Mrs. Verrall would write to her about. The supernormalness of the case is confined to Mrs. Verrall's perception of the situation of Mrs. Forbes, not at 10.30 p.m. when the script was produced, but earlier in the afternoon when she herself was writing automatically. But Mrs. Forbes's drawing-room and her usual place by the fire were known to Mrs. Verrall, and her letter had suggested that a scene would be shown to her co-operator. Thus the whole might be put down to imagination with no addition of clairvoyance. On the other hand, however, Mrs. Verrall used to associate Mrs. Forbes not with her drawing-room but with her own sitting-room where she did her automatic writing. Moreover, divers minor circumstances agreed with her impression. Mrs. Forbes and the dog were alone; there had been two dogs constantly with her when Mrs. Verrall last stayed at the house, but only one was in the room on this occasion. She was holding a piece of paper as a screen. The door to the greenhouse was open, the room mainly fire-lighted; there was a small lamp but little light from it.

Altogether, Mrs. Verrall's impressions on this occasion may thus be said to be of the same type as those about her own surroundings which the script of Mrs. Forbes several times reflected. But more than a proof of her faculty of supernormal perception the incident does not contain. Her romance about Talbot in his mother's drawing-room is quite another thing than that which Mrs. Forbes's script spoke of; there it was Gurney who would send some "story scene or episode." On the basis of the impulse given by this script Mrs. Verrall had dreamed on in a manner which under the circumstances was very natural.

CHAPTER VII

PSYCHOMETRY AND PREVISION

WHETHER impressions like those of Mrs. Verrall and her fellow-experimenter are due to mind-reading or to direct clairvoyance is difficult to decide. It is even possible that they have something to do with psychometry. Mrs. Verrall constantly received letters from Mrs. Forbes and *vice versâ ;* the acquirement of knowledge supernormally by means of a written document about the writer, as well as by means of an object about the person who makes use of it, is just what psychometric performances are aiming at. The different psychic phenomena seem to have a tendency to merge into one another, and Mrs. Verrall has in other cases been proved to possess an unquestionable power to psychometrize.

A single but interesting instance hereof is found within the period dealt with by Mrs. Verrall in her own report.

It belongs to those days when the question of opening Myers's sealed envelope, in consequence of the statements made in Mrs. Verrall's script, was discussed within the Society for Psychical Research. A member of the Society, Mr. Constable, heard about the proposal at the council dinner on October 21st, 1904. It seemed to him that not even such a test, if successful, *i.e.*, if the envelope contained the passage from the *Symposium* as stated in the script, would be conclusive proof of Myers being the source of the script. It was, he argued, not inconceivable that the contents of the letter might become known to a medium by clairvoyance. So he tried to devise a test to distinguish between the effect on a medium of the actual words written in a letter, to be read by clairvoyance, and the thoughts of the writer, to be learned by mind-reading.

With regard to the question here at issue it is of no consequence whether Mr. Constable could achieve his object by such an experiment, which is disputable. He knew himself the contents of the sealed letter which Mrs. Verrall, whose assistance he had asked for, was eventually to read by clairvoyance; thus the possibility was not precluded that she might learn them by reading of his mind. Nevertheless the experiment is instructive.

Mr. Constable had had a psychic experience following upon his mother's death in 1867, in which the word "fuchsia" was the important point. His sealed letter which, on November 9th, 1904, was sent to Mrs. Verrall, contained the sign ☉ and the word *fuchsia*. Contemporaneously, he wrote another letter which was retained in the custody of his wife, and in which he stated that he had been thinking of his mother.

On three occasions, Mrs. Verrall held Mr. Constable's sealed letter in her hand while trying for automatic script. Contrary to her habit, however, after the first attempt, on November 18th, she had a strong impression about the contents, while her script had said nothing referring to them. The impression was as follows:

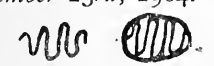
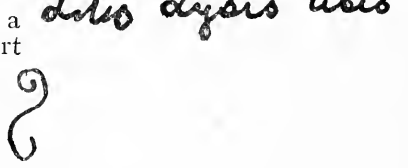
1. That the contents of the letter were less important than the circumstances of the experiment;
2. That the experiment was suggested to Mr. Constable by some one else;
3. That it was connected with the Myers envelope;
4. That the envelope sent to her was one of two and the less important.

All this may, on the whole, be said to be correct. Although in Mr. Constable's opinion the experiment was not suggested to him by any one, it was at least devised as the result of conversations with other persons. The envelope sent to Mrs. Verrall was one of two and the less important, inasmuch as it represented the written word, and not the writer's thoughts. And, above all, "the contents of the letter were less important than the circumstances of the experiment." The connection with

the Myers envelope may no doubt have been a conjecture, or due to the great part it played in the thoughts of the sensitive.

When Mrs. Verrall held the letter for the second time, her hand wrote :

November 23rd, 1904.

"  not yet complete someone has written down a word for you to read—a short word like what is above." 

" But it was not his own idea it was an experiment suggested by someone else. Another person holds the other envelope. The word inside one is mere nonsense just a test, but it is all connected with the real test of the sealed envelope. But what is clear is this There are 2 envelopes and the less important is the one you hold."

The greater portion of this script is a repetition of Mrs. Verrall's impressions on November 18th, which she had at once noted down in her diary. But it gives, withal, the important information that the envelope contained a short word and a drawing, reproducing the latter with approximative correctness ; and are rather similar. That " another person holds the other envelope " is also correct, as it had been given into the custody of Mrs. Constable. The word itself is not reproduced ; but *ysis—usis* may be due to a vague perception of *fuchsia*.

On the third occasion when Mrs. Verrall held the envelope, the script ran :

November 25th, 1904.

" the sign is there—in this envelope as in the other. Why will you not look for it. Tell them that. Long have they waited we do not know why—but can do no more.[1] Don't touch her—let her work alone. the touch confuses. In

[1] These sentences have been quoted above, p. 72.

sleep to-night we will try. But there is less in the contents than in the circumstances—another's suggestion. He only carries out, and all devised as a preliminary to the real trial."

Here the idea of Myers's envelope is entirely interwoven with that of Mr. Constable's. But the relations between them are correctly described, the experiment was in fact a "preliminary to the real trial." And even if the possibility of guessing may detract from the value hereof, this cannot be said with regard to the remaining details.

As a whole the experiment stands out among the rest of Mrs. Verrall's performances already through the circumstance that when she held the letter in her hand for the first time she obtained impressions in an apparently normal state. While the words of her automatic script come to her singly and are forgotten immediately, those impressions were coherent, and she could remember and reproduce them in the usual manner of psychometrists. Moreover, it is noteworthy that Mrs. Verrall neither directly nor through her script caught the idea of Mr. Constable's deceased mother which constituted the second part of the experiment. All her impressions were connected with the piece of paper which she held in her hand. Not only the sign and the word but the circumstances that had caused the production of the letter were dimly perceived by her, while Mr. Constable's other thoughts remained unknown to her. This, of course, is no conclusive proof against mind-reading, as Mr. Constable knew all that she perceived. But that just those things which concerned the letter, and nothing more, were perceived, must nevertheless confirm the conception that "the article" had a share in the result—and that a special place must, among Mrs. Verrall's psychic faculties, be assigned to *psychometry*.

. . . . . .

We have now seen Mrs. Verrall's unquestionable mediumistic power manifest itself as a faculty to receive

impressions from a willing agent—Dr. Verrall—to "perceive" without intentional thought-transmission from anybody—in her relations with Mrs. Forbes—and to psychometrize. There remains to state that her script also contains evidence for her faculty of prevision.

One instance of this class has been mentioned before—the prediction that Mrs. Forbes would be obliged to stay with her mother in the south. In most cases it was as here ordinary occurrences which were foretold. Mrs. Verrall rightly prefers to speak of "anticipations" rather than prophecies. To characterize their type the following examples will suffice.

I begin with a script which has already been mentioned in another connection.

May 11th, 1901.

"Do not hurry date this hoc est quod volui—tandem [this is what I have wanted—at last]. —— A. W. V. [*in Greek*:] and perhaps some one else. Calx pedibus inhaerens difficultatem superavit [chalk sticking to the feet has got over the difficulty] —— [*drawing of a bird*]."

As pointed out before, this script was no doubt connected with Dr. Verrall's experiment; "the cockyoly bird" was the often returning cock that symbolized the *dawn* of his Greek quotation. But, as the script itself has it, "perhaps some one else" played a part in the case.

On May 16th, 1901, Mrs. Verrall saw in the *Westminster Gazette* an account from the *Daily Mail* of May 13th of an incident occurring in the night between May 11th and 12th, which recalled to her the script of May 11th. The writer told how a friend of his had been compelled to leave his rooms on account of "uncanny happenings"; so the writer and another friend had arranged to sit through the night of May 11th in the empty rooms to watch. Powdered chalk had been spread on the floor of two of the rooms to trace anybody or anything that might come or go. Several times the two friends saw doors opened or closed. The last opening took place at 2.9 a.m.

and at 2.30 the watchers examined the chalk and found marks upon it. The marks were clearly defined bird's footprints ; they might be compared to the footprints of a bird about the size of a turkey.

It would be difficult to deny a connection between this event, or the account of it, and the statement in Mrs. Verrall's script about the sticking of chalk to the feet, followed by the drawing of a bird with a jeer. But the script was produced at 11.10 p.m. on May 11th ; the statement therefore anticipated the event by some three hours, and its publication by a still longer period. The chalk may have been spread before 11.10, but the watchers had no expectation as to the sort of marks they might find in it.

As Mrs. Verrall remarks, the question of a connection between the story and the script is not affected by the value of the story. Whether or not a bird made marks in the chalk in the early hours of May 12th, it is certain that a story to that effect was printed on May 13th.

The parallel with another incident makes it more than probable that it was the newspaper story, and not the event, that was anticipated in Mrs. Verrall's script of May 11th, 1901. During a sojourn in Switzerland she wrote as follows :

June 27th, 1902.

"Veni Creator were the words exultans cantavit apud spiritus sanctos inter filios Dei [he (or she) triumphantly sang at the place of the holy spirits among the sons of God]."

On July 4th she read in the *Giornale d'Italia* of July 2nd that at Coursegoules, in the department of Alpes-Maritimes, the Sisters of the Holy Spirit had been expelled, and had left the convent singing the *Veni Creator.* Thus it seemed to have been to this expulsion that the script had referred. But when inquiries were made, Mrs. Verrall learned that there was certainly a convent of the Sisters of the Holy Spirit in the department of Alpes-Maritimes (though at Juan les Pins and not at Coursegoules), and that on June 29th, 1902, in conformity with the edict of

June 27th, the Sisters and orphans had left the Orphelinat for the Oratory, but that at no moment did the Sisters sing the *Veni Creator*. In this case, therefore, it was clear that Mrs. Verrall's script had anticipated the fiction of a journalist, and not the event itself.

As an example of a very insignificant sort of prevision the following may be cited:

September 4th, 1901.
"Madment Maidment——

September 7th, 1901.
"MAIMENT IS WITHIN. on the right-hand side as you look—the window is behind, so it is not very plain to read. But he knows it."

From September 26th till October 2nd, 1901, Mrs. Verrall stayed with friends at Winchester. On September 30th she went with her hostess to a shop and noticed the name *Maidment* on a paper bag hanging up inside the shop on the right-hand wall. The shop-window was, of course, behind her when she was within the shop, but the name was quite plain to read. But the script is as usual vague and groping, and at the same time hinting at a greater knowledge somewhere ("he knows it").

Doubtless the most remarkable among Mrs. Verrall's anticipations were the following two:

December 11th, 1901.
"Nothing too mean the trivial helps, gives confidence. Hence this. Frost and a candle in the dim light Marmontel he was reading on a sofa or in bed—there was only a candle's light. She will surely remember this. The book was lent not his own—he talked about it.

December 17th, 1901.
"I wanted to write Marmontel is right. It was a French book, a Memoir I think. Passy may help. Souvenirs de Passy or Fleury. Marmontel was not on the cover—the book was bound and was lent—two volumes in old-fashioned binding and print. It is not in any papers—it is an attempt to make someone remember—an incident."

Mrs. Verrall did not know the French author Marmontel; but she had probably without noticing seen his name in a list of books which she had glanced at before

December 11th, and where she afterwards found it. On March 1st, 1902, she had a visit from a friend, Mr. Marsh, who mentioned that he had lately been reading Marmontel's Memoirs. Mrs. Verrall asked for particulars about his reading, at the same time explaining her reasons for the question. He then told her that he got the work from the London Library, and took the first of its three volumes to Paris with him; there he read it on the evenings of February 20th and 21st, 1902. On each occasion he read by the light of a candle. On the 20th he was in bed, on the 21st lying on two chairs. The weather was cold, but there was no frost. The book was bound, and not in modern binding, but the name Marmontel was on the back of the volume. As to "Passy" and "Fleury," he added in a letter of March 4th that on February 21st, while lying on two chairs, he read a chapter describing the finding at *Passy* of a panel, etc., connected with a story in which *Fleury* played an important part.

On comparing the divers particulars, true and false, in Mrs. Verrall's script with the actual facts, one gets the impression that she has clairvoyantly caught a glimpse of the scene which as yet belonged to the future—a winter day and some one on something that resembled a sofa, reading by candle-light in a book whose binding was old-fashioned, and at the same time suggestive of a public library, and wherein the passage about *Passy* and *Fleury* was visible. "He talked about it," on the other hand, seems to anticipate that which took place in March, Mr. Marsh's mention of his reading to herself. And the whole of the prevision has in the usual way been put into the mouth of the alleged communicator to serve as a test.

The second remarkable prevision is the following:

April 2nd, 1903.

"Now draw on five stone steps a cross [*drawing*] and on the cross hangs a wreath, a fresh green wreath. They have come to see it there—out in the open on the hill side in the sound of

the sea. It is not a personal thing—but know (*n*). This is for evidence. There is an inscription fastened to the wreath. In honour . In ripis [on the banks of] Douern I think it is for an old heroic deed. Grey sky and sea and the grey gulls cry in the wind.

February 24th, 1905.[1]

"Wait now for this news. There is a grey stone cross on the hill side close by the spot—a cross on stone steps. *Voltigern* no *Volternius* ager is more like. *Voltern's* Field. Some one could tell you of the cross.

March 17th, 1906.

"Stone I want to say. Stone a white stone and no inscription but you would recognize if you saw. Can you not find the cross on its five steps and the green wreath? —— On the banks of the stream—the Derwent water, not a lake—wait and see yourself what I mean."

About a fortnight after the production of the last script, on April 4th, Mrs. Verrall went on a visit to Miss Curtois, in Westminster, a lady whose acquaintance she had made in the preceding autumn. In her room she saw, hanging on the wall, a photograph of a cross on stone steps which reminded her of the cross described in her script. Asked about it Miss Curtois gave her the following information.

In the churchyard of Washingborough, a village near Lincoln, on the river Witham, was an old pedestal of five stone steps. On this pedestal a modern cross was erected in memory of Miss Curtois's mother, Ann Henrietta Curtois, and dedicated on July 5th, 1903. There was no inscription on the cross. A green wreath was once placed on it, most probably at Christmas, 1903, but as it was feared that it might injure the cross, the experiment was not repeated. Miss Curtois did not know whether any inscription was attached to the wreath. The village lies on a little hill near the top of which stands the cross. Miss Curtois said that she had seen the country beneath it flooded and dotted with seagulls, but the sea is some thirty miles away.

[1] In order to complete this incident Mrs. Verrall has made an exception and passed beyond the period (1901—1904) on which she reports.

Mrs. Verrall's script of April 2nd, 1903, to which the two following add nothing of importance, thus seems to have anticipated an event which had not yet occurred. As in the Marmontel case, the prevision seems to describe a definite situation, *viz.*, the moment when they had " come to see it (*i.e.*, the cross with the wreath) there out in the open on the hill side." Miss Curtois said that there had been a great deal of discussion about the wreath. As the cross was not dedicated until July 5th, 1903, the scene which Mrs. Verrall perceived cannot at any rate have taken place before this date. The supposition that it took place at Christmas is supported by the description of the winter landscape.

The remark in the script of February 24th, 1905, " some one could tell you of the cross," makes an interesting parallel to the one in the Marmontel case, " he talked about it." Both contain the special prophecy that Mrs. Verrall will meet some one who will elucidate the incomprehensible things which her hand in both cases had produced. Noteworthy is also the remark in the Marmontel script of December 17th, 1901, " it is not in any papers " ; it was in the newspapers that the explanation of the script with " the cockyoly bird " had been found. It seems as if Mrs. Verrall subconsciously knew that she must meet somewhere in her real life that which as yet only dawns in that part of her self that speaks in her script.

One is reminded of Myers's words about the possibility that the wider self with equal directness and immediacy discerns every element of the phenomenon which we call Life, and at times calls to the narrower, waking self.

CHAPTER VIII

CROSS-CORRESPONDENCES WITH MRS. PIPER

MRS. VERRALL'S report contains one thing more of some interest, namely the so-called cross-correspondences with Mrs. Piper. Cross-correspondences with this renowned medium got to play a large part later on in the experiments of the Society for Psychical Research; it may therefore be useful to inquire into their character at that time. It was at a period when Dr. Richard Hodgson had the charge of the sittings with Mrs. Piper in Boston, and in the few, hardly more than two, cases where a connection seems to exist between these sittings and Mrs. Verrall's script, the plan of the "correspondence" was proposed by him. In the first case it was suggested to him through an unverified assertion by Mrs. Piper's "control" that a vision of a figure had been seen by Mrs. Verrall's daughter Helen. This led to the following conversation at a Piper-sitting:

January 28th, 1902.
"*Dr. Hodgson.* Can you try and make Helen see you holding a spear in your hand?
"*Control.* Why a sphere?
"*Dr. Hodgson.* A spear."

The control promised to try, and at the next sitting, on February 4th, claimed to have succeeded in making himself visible to Helen Verrall with a "sphear" [*sic*].

Miss Verrall had no such vision. Mrs. Verrall, however, three days after the seance in Boston, having lunched with Mr. Piddington in London, felt suddenly so strong a desire to write automatically that she made an excuse for not accompanying him and Sir Oliver Lodge to the

S.P.R. council meeting as had been arranged. After their departure she wrote as follows :

January 31st, 1902.

" Panopticon *σφαιρᾶς ἀτιτάλλει συνδέγμὰ μνστικόν, τί οὐκ ἐδίδως* ; volatile ferrum—pro telo impinget [Universal seeing of a sphere fosters the mystic joint-reception. Why did you not give it ? the flying iron—used as a weapon will hit].——"

She was interrupted by Mr. Piddington returning to fetch her. But in the train on the way home to Cambridge more script was produced. That script, however, contained no verifiable statement, but was signed with two crosses, one of them being the Greek cross used by " Rector," one of Mrs. Piper's chief controls.

Mrs. Verrall contends that there is strong reason for thinking that her script of January 31st was in some way affected by the experiment proposed in Boston. Probably she is right ; but the question remains, in what manner ? Mrs. Piper's control claimed to have made himself visible to Miss Helen Verrall, and did not seem to know anything about her mother's script. Besides, the character of the latter speaks decidedly against interpreting it as the result of intentional transmission. The commingling of " sphere " and " spear " is more indicative of a vague impression like those which, for instance, Miss Ramsden got from Miss Miles without any intention on the part of the latter. It is conceivable that it originated from Dr. Hodgson, or rather from the " conversation " between him and the control. In view of the interchanging of letters between Dr. Hodgson and Mrs. Verrall, this would hardly be more singular than Miss Ramsden obtaining impressions of conversations between Miss Miles and her friends. That the notion of " Rector " emerged with the rest can only strengthen the supposition of such a connection.[1]

In April, 1902, Dr. Hodgson proposed an experiment

[1] Dr. Joseph Maxwell (*Proceedings* S.P.R., Vol. XXVI., p. 60) points out that " panopticon *σφαιρᾶς* " occurs already in Mrs. Verrall's script from March, 1901. That the expression had been used before might no doubt facilitate its appearance.

with Mrs. Verrall as agent; she should look at a noticeable group of flowers and try to get them mentioned to him in Mrs. Piper's trance. This, however, led to nothing except some allusions to flowers in Mrs. Verrall's own script.

The next case is more like a real cross-correspondence. On March 10th, 1903, Dr. Hodgson gave to the entranced Mrs. Piper what is described as "a pass-word for reproduction by other automatists"; the intention being that her controls should reproduce it in, for instance, Mrs. Verrall's script. It was not a real word, but, as Mrs. Verrall learned later, an arbitrary collection of letters, *stabdelta*. Mrs. Verrall knew nothing about the experiment, but thinks that the following scripts contain attempts to produce the word:

March 15th, 1903.

"Σ is the first to be recognized but there are others. Write yourself now —— *Camilla* inest [is in it] —— *Camelot* or Cameleon—Camus no there is an illa or ella somewhere —— But Hodgson would understand much *that you write—he must see it* ——

March 17th, 1903.

"The word is *Caldiona* more like that. Capella Aurigae seems much nearer. Find what constellation is marked with γ —— Ask Hodgson too—

April 17th, 1903.

"*Orotava* or something like that is the pass-word Life is more like the word on the seal."

In the latter script it is plainly said that *Orotava* or something like that is the pass-word. It seems, in fact, as the automatist herself believed afterwards, that this evident seeking for a definite word is connected with the *stabdelta* experiment in Boston. At the time, however, Mrs. Verrall took it to refer to a Myers envelope, and was, as we have seen, led to believe that such a one had been committed to the charge of Dr. Hodgson. Under these circumstances she produced the following scripts:

August 18th, 1903.

"The box —— Hodgson expects a message about it before he will open it—you have sent part of the word to him but

not all. The word you should send is the name of a ship—Orinaria Orellaria, like that. It ends in—ia. —— *Oriana* no *Oronia Auronia* no *Orona.*

September 9th, 1903.

" Coronaria Campanile—Coronella no but why the star? Auriga Capellae has the letters of it but is too long—and it should be one word not two. Auricapella auricolorata Oriflamma auricomata goldhaired —— *Oritella Coronata* Ariadne's crown in the sky ——

September 17th, 1903.

" You have the key word now —— Hodgson will act, but will not tell you till it is done."

These scripts did not, in the opinion of Mrs. Verrall, refer to the pass-word experiment. It seems, though, that *Orellaria, Coronella, Oritella,* are quite as good approaches to " Stabdelta " as *Camilla, Orotava,* etc., in the writings from the preceding spring. " Auriga Capellae " appears both in March and September, and the connection with Dr. Hodgson is indisputable in both series.

But the problem is not solved even if it be admitted that Mrs. Verrall for a long time worked persistently at reproducing the word which Dr. Hodgson and the control of Mrs. Piper had agreed to send her. The case differs very much from that of " sphere." There at any rate she was only perceiving something which nobody had wanted to transmit; what she obtained was a vague and dim impression, but it came out without any hesitation in that manner which we have throughout found to be typical of spontaneous perception. Just on the contrary, the attempts at *stabdelta* exhibit all those criterions that characterized Dr. Verrall's experiment with the one-horse dawn. It was just as difficult, nay impossible, for Mrs. Verrall to write *stabdelta* as it had been to reproduce the Greek phrase. But she tried and struggled, reverting again and again to the attempt; it was as if a foreign will had got hold of her and would not let go. As regards the Greek words, we know that such was really the case. But here the parallel with the pass-word fails; Dr. Hodgson was not a " willing agent." He knew the word, but

he did not try to impress Mrs. Verrall to write it. The assertion that he, nevertheless, was the transmittor cannot be advanced with any show of reason.

For completeness' sake two more incidents that touch upon Dr. Hodgson ought to be mentioned. As just said, Mrs. Verrall did not connect the above scripts from the autumn of 1903 with the *stabdelta* experiment. All the same, she took them to refer to Dr. Hodgson, and thought that the following script was a continuation of them:

October 5th, 1903.

"Ariadne stella coronaria hoc est omen et nomen—mitte [Ariadne a crowned star this is the omen and the name—send it]. Seven stars in the crown and Berenice's hair too flava comam [yellow-haired] —— lilia Olympiaca non Romana [Olympian lilies not Roman] ——"

To obey the instruction, Mrs. Verrall sent the script to Dr. Hodgson. He replied that the phrase about "Olympian lilies not Roman" had reminded him of the name *syringa*, but that he could trace no connection. Syringa blossoms, he added, had a special significance for him. He had looked up syringa in a dictionary and found that its Latin name is *Philadelphus coronarius*.

Mrs. Verrall who, as must be borne in mind, did not connect the later attempts at producing a word with the *stabdelta* experiment of which she had now been told, got the idea on reading Dr. Hodgson's letter that *Oritella coronata* perhaps represented attempts at the name *Philadelphus coronarius*. Moreover, it occurred to her that the introduction of Berenice was accounted for if what was wanted was not only *coronarius* but *Philadelphus* —because of the relationship of Berenice to Ptolemy Philadelphus.

The idea of course falls to the ground when *Oritella*, etc., are seen to be attempts at *stabdelta*. As to "Berenice's hair," that is the name of a constellation, it was probably suggested by the mention of "Ariadne's crown," which again was due, perhaps, to *Auriga Capellae* in the script of September 9th that contains both.

This incident, then, cannot be used as evidence of a supernormal connection between Dr. Hodgson and Mrs. Verrall's automatic writing. At a later time her script contained a reference to " Hodgson's constellation," after which came the following:

July 3rd, 1904.
" That star is visible in winter nights Auriga Capellae: it was one winter night that the star and the resolve flashed out together, & the shape of his life was thus determined, though not carried out for four more years."

Mrs. Verrall says that " Hodgson's constellation " and " Auriga Capellæ " with the subsequent statement about " four more years " were intelligible to Dr. Hodgson, though meaningless to her. This might go to show that she was capable of obtaining impressions about him. But the account is incomplete, and, moreover, the possibility of latent memory—of her having sometime without remembering heard of the event to which the script is presumed to refer—is too great to enable us to build anything on an isolated incident like this. At any rate it would be impossible from this case to draw a conclusion to that of *stabdelta*, which is of quite another type. The latter must be left standing as the sole incident that has not been fully elucidated by a comparison with those phenomena which do not pretend to be due to the intervention of the dead.

SECTION III

The Automatic Writing of Mrs. Holland

CHAPTER IX

SPONTANEOUS WRITING

In the years following the period on which Mrs. Verrall reports, her script presents a new interest on account of its relation to another automatic writer whose faculties in many respects resemble her own. This was a lady who was introduced to the public by the pseudonym of Mrs. Holland, and whose productions are the subject of a series of reports by the secretary of the Society for Psychical Research, Miss Alice Johnson, together with those writings of Mrs. Verrall's which seem to be in some way connected with them.[1]

The mediumism of Mrs. Holland is doubtless more spontaneous and perhaps more extensive than that of Mrs. Verrall. The disparity between them forms an obvious parallel to that between Miss Miles and Miss Ramsden. In the year 1893, Mrs. Holland in the *Review of Reviews*, saw a reference to automatic writing, and when she afterwards tried it herself, her hand began to form words almost immediately. Also, she is able to see pictures in a crystal. Moreover " she does see, hear, feel or otherwise become conscious of beings and influences that are not patent to all." The same was the case with Miss Miles, but not with Miss Ramsden. Of her visions, Mrs. Holland, referring to one of them, says, " By seeing

[1] *Proceedings* S.P.R., Vol. XXI., pp. 166—391; Vol. XXIV., pp. 2—10 and 201—263; and Vol. XXV., pp. 218—303.

I do not mean——standing in the room; I saw it 'at the back of the brain' in the way that clairvoyant sights come to me."

When Mrs. Holland writes automatically, she is always fully conscious, but her hand moves so rapidly that she seldom knows what words it is forming. She is, however, immediately after their production more conscious of them than Mrs. Verrall is of her script. She sometimes asks questions of the writing power which she puts down with full consciousness among the automatically written sentences. It happens too that instead of writing automatically she notes down impressions that come to her when she is trying for automatic script.

Later she displayed during her writing a tendency to become unconscious that even threatened to develop into trance. In November, 1904, she spoke in the presence of a friend in a trance condition for about a quarter of an hour. She succeeded, however, in conquering this tendency, which made her very uncomfortable. She had never been present at seances or had to do at all with spiritualism. Neither had she any first-hand knowledge of psychical research nor of the publications of the Society. As mentioned above, she had only read in the *Review of Reviews* about automatic writing. Besides, she had read some collections of ghost stories, and a manuscript book of "spirit-writings" which she had disliked very much.

Mrs. Holland was very familiar with English poetry, and wrote verse herself. During a long period her script was almost exclusively in verse. Contrary to her original compositions they came with great rapidity as if swiftly dictated, and there were never any erasures. In return they were, as she says herself, "often childishly simple in wording and jingling in rhyme."

Generally the verses did not deal with facts. As an exception is mentioned a case where a clairvoyant perception seems to have called forth the script. In Italy, in the year 1901, the day after her arrival in an old palazzo

she had never before seen, the impulse to write came on her, and she wrote as follows :

" Under the orange tree
Who is it lies ?
Baby hair that is flaxen fair,
Shines when the dew on the grass is wet,
Under the iris and violet.
'Neath the orange tree
Where the dead leaves be,
Look at the dead child's eyes ! "

On reading it to a friend she was told that there was a tradition that a child was buried in the garden of the palace.

Later she experienced a new form of automatic writing. On several occasions her hand insisted on writing a letter or message from some dead person whom she did not know, to some one among her acquaintance. It was clearly impressed upon her for whom the letter was intended, and she felt compelled to send it. It was always to a person with whom she had recently become acquainted.

In 1903, Mrs. Holland, who was then living in India, read Frederic Myers's recently published work, *Human Personality and its Survival of Bodily Death.* This book became for her what the author's death had been for Mrs. Verrall, the commencement of a new era in her life. She was greatly interested in it and, on July 2nd, wrote to Miss Johnson, whom she did not know personally, and told her of her own experiences. Miss Johnson answered her letter, and the correspondence was continued during the following winter. By agreement Mrs. Holland was kept ignorant of the secretary's opinion about her script ; on the whole the latter was careful not to mention anything that might detract from the evidential value of the productions. Mrs. Holland met her for the first time during a sojourn in England about two years later.

But it was not only the acquaintance with Miss Johnson, and the latter's interest in her automatic writing, which

became for Mrs. Holland the important consequence of her reading of *Human Personality*. In her script itself it left its mark in a most conspicuous manner. Henceforward it was Myers who spoke through it, with Edmund Gurney to assist him as he had assisted him in their mutual youth when both were full of enthusiasm for psychical research. Also Mrs. Holland had got to know the third confederate, Henry Sidgwick, by means of *Human Personality*, besides many of Myers's friends who were still living. What the book might teach her about Myers himself, of his personality as well as of his opinions, every reader of it will know.

Here, then, was plenty of material for the subconscious imagination to work upon. Neither does the editor of the script ignore this circumstance. Miss Johnson writes : " Her first reading of *Human Personality* formed an epoch in Mrs. Holland's life, and thenceforth her automatic writing was coloured largely by the influence of that book. The personality of the author strongly appealed to her—it was not only natural but almost inevitable that a great part of her writing should now purport to be inspired by him, or—to a less extent—by the two friends to whom his book is dedicated, Mr. Gurney and Dr. Sidgwick." Later on she adds : " I am bound to emphasize the large part played by Mrs. Holland's normal knowledge in the construction of the various rôles. They came into existence first shortly after she had read *Human Personality*, and it will be seen that passages from this book are clearly to be traced in the script ; there is little or nothing in the characterizations that could not be derived from it directly or by inference by an intelligent and sympathetic reader. There are, moreover, a certain number of features that an intimate friend of Mr. Myers's would see to be uncharacteristic or positively incorrect. Further, the personalities become suddenly more vivid and realistic at a later date, after Mrs. Holland had seen the portraits of Mr. Myers, Mr. Gurney and Dr. Sidgwick."

We are then in the presence of a phenomenon which seems to have the same origin as much of Mrs. Verrall's script. A more or less conscious desire to come into communication with Frederic Myers was the foundation of the productions of both automatists—those of Mrs. Verrall who had lost a friend, and those of Mrs. Holland who too late, through his posthumous work, had made the acquaintance of a congenial personality. Also in details, their scripts display a psychological resemblance. Mrs. Holland, as well as Mrs. Verrall, had a great dread of being imposed upon by her own self. Mrs. Verrall had hesitated in putting the names of Myers and other alleged communicators under the script. Mrs. Holland had a similar struggle with the "invisible writer." The result of it was in her case the most singular arrangements, numbers instead of letters, dates made unrecognizable by being scattered throughout the script, and names that could only be read by substituting the preceding letters of the alphabet for the written ones. She had as a child played at a secret language made by using either the letter before or the letter after the real one. One is reminded of Professor Flournoy's Helen Smith and the Martian language.

When the script of Mrs. Verrall made one part of her personality call itself "I" and address the other part as "you," and made the "I" be knowing and somewhat impatient with the other's want of comprehension, it was implied, even when not expressly stated, that "I" was a deceased person. With Mrs. Holland it is as a rule distinctly indicated who the writer is; Myers is gentle, Gurney exacting and impatient; the handwriting is different; one will only use a pen, the other a pencil, etc. Often the automatist asks questions of them in her own name and with full consciousness. But in spite of all this it is, as with Mrs. Verrall, evident that she holds, in fact, a conversation with herself. A great portion of the script consists in admonitions to write more often and regularly and not to dread that it is herself who

produces the script, regret that she is alone with her interest, advice with regard to the writing, and the like. " It is such a pity to break the chain—Since you were out in the morning yesterday why didn't you try in the afternoon—a few minutes each day are not much to ask from you." " Do try to forget your abiding fear of being made a fool or a dupe——It's a form of restless vanity to fear that your hand is imposing upon itself as it were—Leave yourself out of the matter." " I fear you will never be really responsive trying alone." " The agent [*sic*] is all alone and that makes it hard." " Try not to wish too much for any particular topic—or you are more likely to deceive yourself by supplying phrases from the subliminal self." The subject is varied often and in many ways ; it is evident that Mrs. Holland vacillates between doubt and belief.

In the light hereof the lamentations must also be seen which the script puts into the mouth of Myers of being unable to reach his friends in England. " I cannot reach them." " I cannot get into communication with those who would understand and believe me." " Surely you sent them what I strove so to transmit." [1] Mrs. Holland's fear that the script was not what it pretended to be made her hesitate in sending it to Miss Johnson. These exhortations from " Myers " thus seem to be the means found by the automatic self to conquer her unwillingness.

Miss Johnson, as said before, did not let the automatist know anything about her valuation of the script. It will be seen later that in spite of her clear perception of the influence due to the reading of *Human Personality* she arrived at the conclusion that this could not explain everything. The subconscious imagination of Mrs. Holland was considerable, and her latent memory so extensive that in all cases where there is the barest

[1] It is clear that utterances like these do not agree with the belief in Myers's communications through Mrs. Verrall. As there is, however, no ground to accept the latter as genuine, the contradiction cannot speak against the genuineness of his communications through Mrs. Holland. They must stand or fall alone.

possibility for an appeal to cryptomnesia it is necessary to make it; but interspersed in her productions things occurred which could neither be ascribed to one nor to the other of these qualities. From whence they came, and how far they can justify the assumption that Myers or other discarnate communicated by means of her hand, are questions which an investigation of the most important among her writings will decide.

. . . . . .

The first script of Mrs. Holland's ascribed to Myers was the following:

September 16th, 1903.

" F.

" Friend while on earth with knowledge slight
I had the living power to write
Death tutored now in things of might
I yearn to you and cannot write.

17 |

" It may be that those who die suddenly suffer no prolonged obscuration of consciousness but for my own experience the unconsciousness was exceedingly prolonged.

| 1

" The reality is infinitely more wonderful than our most daring conjectures. Indeed no conjecture can be sufficiently daring.

| 01

" But this is like the first stumbling attempts at expression in an unknown language imperfectly explained so far away so very far away and yet longing and understanding potentialities of nearness.

" M."

One of the traits that characterize Mrs. Holland's script—that it, as it were, wants to mystify herself—is displayed here. The two initials of course stand for Frederic Myers, and the numbers when put together make " January 17th, 1901," which was the day of his death, as stated in *Human Personality*. For the rest, in this script the tone is already struck which for Mrs. Holland gave her productions, so to speak, their *raison d'être*,—Myers's desire to communicate with the living. But although he is represented as saying, " I yearn to

you and cannot write," and speaking of "stumbling attempts," the script is in fact exactly *so* fluent as automatic compositions generally are when undisturbed by any outside influence.

Later in the same day Mrs. Holland wrote another piece of script which like her earlier productions was entirely in verse.

September 16th, 1903.

"1888 F. E. HS. [*in monogram*]

"Believe in what thou canst not see
Until the vision come to thee——
There were three workers once upon the earth
Three that have passed through Death's great second birth
Their work remains and some of lasting worth
Long dead and lately dead shall be as one.
"1888. 1888."

It is the idea that had impressed Mrs. Holland so strongly, of the three friends, now all dead, and their work, which has here gained expression. "F." is Myers, "E." Gurney, and "H.S." Professor Henry Sidgwick, that is, the author of *Human Personality* and the two men to whom it is dedicated. The early death of Gurney seems to have made a special impression upon her; it took place in the year 1888 as intimated in the script—and stated in the book.

In a following script she reverts to the same idea:

September 18th, 1903.

"1873. 30 years ago. *C m r d e. A b i g. Y o u t h.*

"It has been a long work—but the work is not nearly over yet—It has barely begun—Go on with it—go on—We were the torch bearers—follow after us—The flame burns more steadily now—

"E. G. 1888."

The mysterious letters "C m r d e A b i g" are an anagram for Cambridge. On one of the first pages of *Human Personality* is the passage: "In about 1873—— it became the conviction of a small group of Cambridge friends that the deep questions thus at issue must be fought out——."

So far everything must be explained as owing to the reading of Myers's book. But very soon things appear which cannot be so explained. By the handwriting which is ascribed to Myers, Mrs. Holland writes as follows :

September 21st, 1903.

" A room that is rather narrow for its length with three windows and a long narrow table covered with a dull red cloth rather faded.

" The walls need repapering. The ceiling needs white-washing. There is a portrait over the fire-place of a man with a high forehead—the background of it is very dark—A bust on a pedestal stands in a very shadowed corner—The head is not clear—round the shoulders is a kind of bath towel like drapery. The pedestal is imitation greenish marble—

" There are a few good prints in the room—but it is not easy to see them—

" Shelves on one side have a few books and a great many papers and pamphlets on them—The room is not in the least interesting in itself but very interesting things have happened there and some men now dead still influence that room very strongly—"

Mrs. Verrall, on reading this script more than two years later, pointed out to Miss Johnson that the description applied closely to her dining-room ; only the portrait, which represented Dr. Verrall, was beside the fire-place and not over it, and there was no bust in the room. In a dark corner, however, stood a large filter ; a friend of Mrs. Verrall's, on being told of the description, exclaimed : " But there is a bust in your dining-room " ; Mrs. Verrall took him into the room and found that what he had taken for a bust was really this filter.

Mrs. Holland thus seems to have had a clairvoyant perception of a room that she had never seen, and of which it was impossible that she could have read or heard. Here at any rate we find a supernormal element in her script. And it was not the sole case where, while still in India, she saw a picture of something that existed far away in England.

A few weeks later appeared the following which, after

the fashion of her earlier productions, was formed as a letter :

November 7th, 1903.
" My dear Mrs. Verrall
" I am very anxious to speak to some of the old friends—Miss J.—and to A. W.
" There is so much to say and yet so very little chance of saying it. Communication is tremendously difficult. The brain of the agent though indispensable is so hampering I think it might be better if the agent wrote the thoughts in her brain instead of keeping a vacant brain and a passive hand—"

It is difficult to imagine another than Mrs. Holland herself being the origin of this letter, which is interrupted because she prefers to write down impressions in her own name. Moreover, she has committed the mistake to speak of herself as the *agent ;* no doubt she conceives her writing as an action ; in Myers's language she would of course have been called the percipient.

The remarkable point is, that the letter is addressed to Mrs. Verrall, and that it refers to " A. W.," the use of these initials being characteristic for the friends of Dr. Verrall. Mrs. Holland, however, knew of Mrs. Verrall from *Human Personality*, where she is mentioned as " Mrs. A. W. Verrall, a lecturer at Newnham College " ; thus it is probable that she has from thence got the idea of her husband as " A. W."

The script goes on, Mrs. Holland having in reply to the last remark declared that she will write down what she is thinking of. This is as follows :

" I find myself picturing a tall man who seems about 60 years of age—He is rather thin and has bent shoulders—His face is pale—not handsome—*very* intelligent—He has a moustache—dark—with grey threads—more grey than his hair—which is thin—parted at one side and pushed over the top of the head—It has receded a good deal from the temples —His eyes are grey—he wears pince nez—The nose is rather long—the face narrow—the throat is long—He used to have a nervous cough—When he is interested in what he talks of he has a trick of leaning forward and gesticulating a good deal—He has well shaped hands with long fingers—There is a seal ring on the little finger of the right hand—but I can't

see if it has a crest or a monogram on it—His tie is rather loosely tied—he wears no pin in it—It is more like looking at a lantern picture than at a real man—I mean he seems to be summoning up the appearance of what he used to be—I can feel that he wants to say many things—but only confused phrases reach me—that I can't note down—But what seems to be an address is very clear—5 Selwyn Gardens—Cambridge."

Mrs. Holland—at any rate subconsciously—believed that the man she had here described was Myers. Therefore she ascribed the dimness of the picture to the circumstance that it was a deceased person she saw. "He seems to be summoning up the appearance of what he used to be," she writes. And therefore she believed she could feel that he wanted to "say many things." On November 21st, the script makes Gurney say about Myers: "It was a tremendous effort to him to appear in your mind's eye the way that he did a fortnight ago—and it has weakened the messages ever since." Here, at any rate, is evidence of pure fiction. For it was *not* Myers who had "appeared in her mind's eye" on November 7th. The description seems in almost all particulars to fit Dr. Verrall. Miss Johnson writes: "In 1903 Dr. Verrall was 52, but looked older on account of his delicate health. He had a beard as well as moustache—more grey than his hair; when run down, he tended to have a nervous cough. His hands were well-shaped with long fingers which have become crippled and much bent from rheumatism. He has never worn a seal ring. The other points mentioned are correct." Mrs. Verrall adds: "The attitude strikes me as particularly good. The trick of leaning forward and gesticulating when interested in what he talks of is very characteristic."

Thus Mrs. Holland once more seems to have had a veridical impression, with the deficiencies that are usual in "clairvoyance." The address that followed, as if belonging to the impression, was that of the Verralls. It is not given in *Human Personality*. Of course Mrs. Holland may have seen it elsewhere, in *Who's Who?* for

instance, as Miss Johnson intimates; but it is at least conceivable that it may have been caught supernormally together with the impression of Dr. Verrall; we have seen that Miss Ramsden could obtain names as well as pictures which belonged to the surroundings of Miss Miles, and that without any intention on the part of the latter.

After the description of Dr. Verrall the script went on as follows:

"I will write down the stray words and phrases that come into my mind—

"Edmund—the first to come Henry I had to wait some time for—Those one most wants have often their own employments—S M [*probably Stainton Moses*] has not appeared yet—Tell Miss J— that the compact is not forgotten—

"I knew the success at once—The Times—Is A. W. satisfied? Pod—how the typewriter?

"Only a little at a time—Practice is needed and sympathy. The agent is all alone and that makes it hard.

"Eidolon [*attempt at Greek letters*]—Timor mortis [fear of death].

"Lucy—Lucy. Agnes Lysaght 17 Manchester Square.

"Send to 5 Selwyn Gardens Cambridge.

"—— It is like entrusting a message on which infinite importance depends to a sleeping person—Get a proof—try for a proof if you feel this is a waste of time without. Send this to Mrs. Verrall 5 Selwyn Gardens Cambridge."

Much of this is pure imagination. Not only was there no Agnes Lysaght in Manchester Square, nor had the talk of a compact and a success any foundation.

The remaining part does not differ from the preceding constructions based on *Human Personality*. An exception is the word *eidolon*. Mrs. Holland, who did not know either Greek or Latin, did not understand this Greek term which if employed by Myers would be specially appropriate. It returns in later writings and will be discussed there.

The next script of interest contains the following description given in the "Myers handwriting":

January 5th, 1904.

"She is not very tall—a slender figure often dressed in green—dark hair—rather pushed from the forehead—straying

a little from the centre parting—very mobile brows—pince-nez when she writes—A strong chin—mouth thin-lipped but sympathetic—a *strong* but not a *hard* one—Mind admirably well balance [*sic*]—Hands with long fingers—but the palms well developed—No foolish impulses—but no fear of sudden actions which seem the outcome of sudden impulse—Age—32—33—I forget—what importance has age to me now—"

The description appears to fit Mrs. Verrall. That it is due to supernormal perception seems clear. Mrs. Holland ascribes it to Myers—the phrase "what importance has age to me now," marks it as the product of a discarnate—at the same time reproducing it with a womanly sense for particulars which was characteristic, too, of her description of the Verralls' dining-room, and which will reappear in later cases.

The next writings refer to the *eidolon*. "Myers" says:

January 7th, 1904.

"I want to make it thoroughly clear to you all that the eidolon is not the *spirit*—only the simulachrum [*sic*]—If M were to see me sitting at my table or if any one of you became conscious of my semblance standing near my chair that would not be *me*. My spirit would be there invisible but perceptive but the appearance would be merely to call your attention to identify me—It fades and grows less easily recognizable as the years pass and my remembrance of my earthly appearance grows weaker —— the phantasm the so-called ghost is a counterfeit presentment *projected by* the spirit . . .

January 8th, 1904.

"The appearance of the simulacre [*sic*] does not necessarily imply that the spirit is consciously present. It may project the phantasm from a great distance. More usually however it is present. On two occasions only I myself have been able to perceive the surroundings I so desired to see—Once at a meeting —— The next time was a few weeks ago at home.

"I would try so hard on the anniversary that is only nine days away now if I could be sure that you really wished and desired my eidolon without any fear or reluctance——"

The starting-point for these writings seems to be a vision which Mrs. Holland had on the night of January 4th, of a man sitting at a writing table. His head was so bent

that she only saw "a fine brow, grey hair, the points of his rather old-fashioned turned-down collar, and a loosely tied dark tie." If this vision represented her subconscious conception of Myers, the disparity between it and her impression in November, which she also took to refer to Myers, may well have caused her reflections about the phantom not being the spirit itself. At the same time, as Miss Johnson points out, "the theory here expressed as to the true nature of a ghost is no doubt derived from the first part of the chapter on 'Phantasms of the Dead' in *Human Personality*, Vol. II."

Remarkable, however, is the correct use of the words *eidolon* and *simulacrum*, which do not occur in the said chapter. *Eidolon* is used in *Odyssey* XI., v. 601, where it is told that Odysseus in Hades meets "great Herakles, his phantom (εἴδωλον); himself rejoices amid the immortals." The passage is alluded to by Plotinus, and this allusion is quoted in *Human Personality*, Vol. II. (p. 290); but neither the Greek nor the Latin word is mentioned there. Myers, however, employs the term *eidolon* in a paper in the S.P.R. *Proceedings*, Vol. VI. (p. 64), in the same sense as Mrs. Holland's script.[1] Mrs. Holland felt sure of having never seen any volume of the *Proceedings*; but she may have seen extracts from them elsewhere. It is impossible to exclude the possibility of cryptomnesia in questions regarding matter that has appeared in print. Moreover, Mrs. Holland is a great reader, and reads very fast: "I am," she herself narrates, "a proverb in my family for 'tearing the heart' out of a book or a paper in a few minutes."

The initial *M* in the script of January 7th is supposed to mean *Margaret*, and to refer to Mrs. Verrall. In later scripts it is undoubtedly used in this sense. Here, again, as with regard to the address, Selwyn Gardens, two explanations are possible; Mrs. Holland may somewhere have seen Mrs. Verrall's Christian name, or she may have

[1] See Miss Johnson's second report on Mrs. Holland's automatic writing, *Proceedings* S.P.R., Vol. XXIV., p. 3.

obtained it supernormally together with the impression of her personality.

On January 8th the writing had alluded to the anniversary of Myers's death, January 17th. It had played a part already in the first script of Mrs. Holland's that purported to come from him ; it is on the whole characteristic of her script to lay stress on dates. On the said anniversary she wrote her next important piece in the name of Myers :

"Thursday, January 17th, 1901.

"I have no wish to return in thought or memory to that time but let the date stand for what it stands for to mine and me— ——

"The sealed envelope (1899) is not to be opened yet—not yet—

"I am unable to make your hand form Greek characters and so I cannot give the text as I wish—only the reference—1 Cor. 16–13 . . . Oh I am feeble with eagerness—How can I best be identified ——"

It seems certain that Mrs. Holland did not know anything about the sealed envelope which Myers in 1891—not as the script has it, in 1899—had given into the custody of Sir Oliver Lodge for posthumous reading. She remembered, however, that he recommends in *Human Personality* such experiments to be made. The Bible text to which the script gives the reference is the following : "Watch ye, stand fast in the faith, quit you like men, be strong." This text, with the omission of the last two words, is inscribed in Greek over the gateway of Selwyn College, Cambridge. The road in which Mrs. Verrall lives is named Selwyn Gardens, on account of its proximity to Selwyn College.

Mrs. Holland had never been in Cambridge, but of course she might have read about the inscription. Another possibility is that it was perceived by her supernormally in the same way as, perhaps, Mrs. Verrall's address and the initial of her Christian name. That she does not quote the text but only gives the reference is in view of the tendency of her script to mysteriousness not

remarkable. She read the Bible constantly,[1] and may, no doubt, have known subconsciously what the numbers referred to.

But whether the reference to the " Selwyn text " was due to cryptomnesia or to supernormal perception, there seemed at any rate to be a supernormal connection between the script of January 17th, 1904, and Mrs. Verrall.

On the same day the latter wrote as follows : [2]

" S is the letter—S in the envelope—S and on a seal—Σ.
" In Mrs. Sidgwick's letter a Σ—and three words on the paper—not without hope. The question is answered. This must succeed—the other is harder ——
" The text and the answer are one and are given——"

It was in the period when Mrs. Verrall was full of the thought of Myers's sealed letter, and at the same time of a test question which, prompted by her script, she had asked Mrs. Sidgwick to send her. We have seen how the two things were interwoven in her script in a rather confusing manner, and we know how the opening of the envelope proved the statements concerning its contents to be pure construction.

The test question which Mrs. Verrall had received from Mrs. Sidgwick was this : " What was the last of Dr. Sidgwick's texts, the one that belonged to the latter part of his life ? " Professor Sidgwick had in the different periods of his life had different " texts " of this kind ; the last one was : " Gather up the fragments that remain, that nothing be lost." Mrs. Verrall's script of December 25th, 1903, had contained another text of a kindred nature, namely : " Use the daylight hours, for the night cometh when no man may work." Whether its appearance was due to cryptomnesia, subconscious guessing, or an impression caught from Mrs. Sidgwick, is of minor interest in the present connection ; the point is, that the automatist was thinking of a text. Confused as her script of January 17th was, it was equally filled with that matter

[1] See below, p. 125.
[2] *Cf.* above, p. 71.

and with the sealed envelope. Under these circumstances it is that it produces the mystic announcement that "the text and the answer are one and are given."

As may be seen, there is no possibility of construing this into an allusion to Mrs. Holland's script. In the latter, as in that of Mrs. Verrall, there is a reference to a sealed letter and to a text; but it is not the same text. "Mrs. Holland's text," Miss Johnson writes, "has no sort of connection with the text asked for by Mrs. Sidgwick, which Mrs. Verrall's script was trying to produce." Moreover, Mrs. Verrall's script of January 17th has no claim to be considered anything but a subconscious production.

On the other hand, it is more than probable that Mrs. Holland's script is founded on an impression from Mrs. Verrall. It can hardly be due to chance that the references to the sealed envelope and to the text—a text, moreover, which is connected with Mrs. Verrall's residence—appear at a time when the latter was engrossed by the same subjects. It is a cross-correspondence—but a cross-correspondence that has an entirely human foundation.

Mrs. Holland's script of January 17th, 1904, contains one more remarkable passage. She wrote:

"Dear old chap you have done so much in the past three years—I am cognizant of a great deal but with strange gaps in my knowledge—If I could only talk with you—If I could only help you with some advice—I tried more than once did it ever come—There's so much to be learnt from the Diamond Island experiment ——"

Neither Mrs. Holland nor Miss Johnson understood the meaning of this "letter," nor saw for whom it was intended. More than four years after its production, in 1908, Mrs. Holland, however, got the idea that it referred to wireless telegraphy, as there was a wireless station on Diamond Island, in India. Mrs. Verrall now pointed out that the person addressed must be Sir Oliver Lodge; inquiries proved that the Lodge-Muirhead system was in fact at work between Burma and the Andaman Islands,

with a station on Diamond Island. The installation had not begun until February, 1904, but the apparatus had come from England in January.[1]

The discovery, however, lost most of its interest, as it turned out that Mrs. Holland in all probability had in the winter 1903—4 read in the Indian papers about the intended installation. She was interested in wireless telegraphy, had heard a lecture by Marconi, and rather regretted that an Italian was, as she supposed, ahead of Englishmen in this matter. That she had not on the appearance of the script connected it with the subject was natural, as it did not contain anything that pointed to it save the name of Diamond Island, and that name had told her nothing ; in 1908, when the question was reverted to, she confounded it with that of Diamond Harbour, in Bengal.

The whole thing, then, is no doubt due to subconscious memory. That Mrs. Holland by reading about the Lodge-Muirhead system and the experimenting going to be done on Diamond Island supplied her automatic self with material for a "letter" from Myers, is not strange. "Lodge" is mentioned by the Holland-Myers on November 25th, 1903, and the automatist had recently been reminded of him by reading in the *Review of Reviews* a letter from him to the editor of that periodical. At any rate, it is less difficult to adopt this explanation than to suppose that Myers was cognizant of the Diamond Island experiment at a time when it still belonged to the future.

. . . . . .

After this—for nearly a year—Mrs. Holland fought against her tendency to write automatically. She did not herself value her writings much. "She was conscious," Miss Johnson says, "of the superficially trivial and incoherent nature of her script, and could not tell whether there was anything in it beyond a dream-like

[1] *Proceedings* S.P.R., Vol. XXV., pp. 293 *seq.*

réchauffé of her own thoughts." Besides, she suffered by being constantly exposed to interruptions when writing. "The shock of any chance interruption seemed to her out of all proportion to the value of anything she obtained." From April, 1904, till June, 1906, she was in Europe. She did not, however, make the personal acquaintance of Miss Johnson and Mrs. Verrall until the autumn of 1905.

The correspondence with Miss Johnson had also ceased after Mrs. Holland left India. But on February 15th, 1905, she had an unexpected impulse to write automatically, and on the same day sent her script to the secretary. It contained among other things the following piece :

February 15th, 1905.

"'Oh good Oliver! Oh brave Oliver!
Leave me not behind thee!'[1]

"Is your personal interest in me fading even as the years lengthen between your present to-day and the January day that ended time for me—Not the affection that endures I know—but the interest perhaps—Have I gone where the failed experiments go—

"'And all dead dreams go thither
And all disastrous things'

"Under other conditions I should say how much I regretted the failure of the envelope test and I do regret it because it was a disappointment to you—otherwise it is too trivial to waste a thought upon——

"Eternally

"F."

The sealed envelope left by Myers with Sir Oliver Lodge had been opened on December 13th, 1904; an account of the event had been printed in the *Journal* of the Society for January, 1905, and had afterwards been referred to by the papers, which did not, however, mention Mrs. Verrall, but only Sir Oliver Lodge. In view hereof it is almost impossible to help believing that Mrs. Holland had seen one of the newspaper accounts, and that this was the source of her script of February 15th. She did not herself believe so; she felt sure that her interest in Myers would

[1] *Cf.* Shakespeare, *As you Like It*, Act. III., Sc. iii.

have prevented her forgetting such an incident, if she had seen a reference to it. But she may have seen the paragraph without consciously noticing. In view of her manner of reading there is nothing unlikely in this supposition.

As regards this case, the explanation cryptomnesia must, then, suffice. It may in this connection be mentioned that Mrs. Holland, in the course of the summer, 1905, produced a series of scripts that purported to come from the deceased author, Laurence Oliphant, but which in all particulars can be explained by the circumstance that she had, in 1903, read a biography of him. Of course this and similar instances of unquestionable fabrication must not be overlooked when reviewing her production as a whole.

We have now reached a point where such a review ought to take place with regard to the preceding writings. The performances that are of interest in the following period are mostly of another type ; they consist largely in experiments, while the preceding ones were spontaneous. Besides, the personal acquaintance with Miss Johnson and Mrs. Verrall presently intervenes. The writings produced in India in 1903—4 form a separate whole and must be considered separately. Outwardly, the script of February 15th, 1905, belongs to them ; but as it does not seem to contain any supernormal element, it may be disregarded in this connection. The same will apply to several pieces from the earlier period—for instance, those of September 16th and 18th, 1903, and of January 8th, 1904, and many that have not been reproduced here.

The remaining scripts are those of September 21st and November 7th, 1903, and of January 5th, 7th, and 17th, 1904. Of these, three pieces have been seen to contain an undisputably supernormal element, while the same was possibly the case with the two others. The supernormal element was the description of the Verralls' dining-room

on September 21st, of Dr. Verrall on November 7th, and of Mrs. Verrall on January 5th; possibly supernormal were the mention of the latter's initial on January 7th and the reference to the Selwyn text on January 17th; besides, in the script of November 7th, the address of the Verralls. The three last statements *may* be due to latent memory; but as it is impossible to prove this, it cannot be absolutely denied that they may be of the same origin as the three descriptions which cannot be ascribed to cryptomnesia. They are, moreover, of a nature that makes it possible to connect them with the descriptions.

The problem, then, is this, what is the source of these descriptions? It is a problem whose solution is greatly simplified through the circumstance that it is one and the same phenomenon that recurs; a phenomenon, moreover, which we have met before. Such "mental pictures," or clairvoyant impressions, as those which Mrs. Holland caught of Mrs. Verrall's dining-room, her husband, and herself, had Mrs. Verrall obtained from Mrs. Forbes, and *vice-versa*, or, to keep to the experimental territory, Miss Ramsden from Miss Miles. Those of Mrs. Holland were perhaps a little clearer and more detailed—although, as all clairvoyant perceptions, not wholly correct—but essentially they were of the same type as the others. Mrs. Holland's visionary powers seemed altogether more developed than those of the two other sensitives; she was able to see things in a crystal, and had experienced several visions when not writing automatically.

But why did Mrs. Holland get these impressions about people and places that she did not know? We have here to do with a similar phenomenon as that to which Andrew Lang gave the name of "telepathy *à trois*." The visions which Lang's sensitives saw in the glass ball referred to people whom the psychics did not know but who were known to some one among the persons present at the experiment; but this person might himself be ignorant of the things that were perceived. His part was only to

put the medium in rapport with the absent person, whose circumstances were revealed by means of the picture seen in the crystal. It was the necessity of such an intermediary that gave the phenomenon its name; only it ought to have been called *clairvoyance à trois*—or "clairvoyance with rapport"—rather than telepathy; Lang himself did not feel sure that the latter designation hit the mark.

In the case of Mrs. Holland the intermediary must have been Miss Johnson. This supposition is not so improbable as it will perhaps appear at first sight. In a letter of February 23rd, 1905, while Mrs. Holland did not yet know the secretary personally, she begged her to send her some paper that had been lying in her desk, and a penholder that she had used for some time. She fancied that it would help her script to use these things, and though it seemed silly to her to ask for them, she felt that she must do so. Is it possible to doubt that the sensitive was here governed by an instinct, and that the paper and the penholder did play a similar part for her as the "articles" do for those who practise psychometry? On a later occasion she contends that she has got a veridical impression by reading a letter from Miss Johnson, and says: "The conviction came instantly, as an impression gained from a letter often does come with me." Thus letters too seem to convey knowledge to her supernormally. Whether we shall call it psychometry, or regard the objects—paper, penholder, letters—as lines that bring about the connection, is unimportant; most likely it is a different mode of expressing the same thing.

At a later time it once happened that Mrs. Holland caught a veridical impression about Mrs. Forbes's surroundings by reading a letter from Mrs. Verrall. Mrs. Holland did not know Mrs. Forbes, and Mrs. Verrall was not near her when she wrote the letter. This is an almost exact parallel to her obtaining, during the correspondence with Miss Johnson in the winter of 1903—4, veridical impressions about the surroundings of Mrs.

Verrall. That she did not know her correspondent personally is of no consequence, as it was from the letters that the influence emanated ; and no more did she know Miss Johnson when in February, 1905, she asked for her paper and penholder. Neither can it, with regard to this theory, be of any consequence whether the distance between the percipient and the things perceived is great or small. In the moment when Mrs. Holland holds the letter in her hand, she has obtained connection with the writer, and it makes no difference whether it has travelled all the way from England to India or only that from Cambridge to London.

Still, it might be asked why it was just Mrs. Verrall and her surroundings that were perceived by Mrs. Holland through the intermediation of Miss Johnson. Was it because this lady consciously or unconsciously had her in her mind when writing to her fellow-automatist ? Or was it due to the circumstance that Mrs. Verrall herself was a sensitive ? The parallel with her perception of Mrs. Forbes's surroundings cannot help us to solve the question, because both explanations are possible also in the latter case. When Mrs. Verrall wrote the letter that led to Mrs. Holland's perception, Mrs. Forbes in all probability was not far from her thoughts, as she was just in the act of leaving home for a visit to her house in the north of England. But on the other hand, Mrs. Forbes too was a sensitive, and the possibility of this playing a part in the phenomenon is not excluded.

Be that as it may, it seems certain that Miss Johnson was the connecting link between the two automatists in the winter 1903—4. The script of February 15th, 1905, which was produced after the correspondence with the secretary had been discontinued for about a year, contained nothing that suggests supernormal perception.

CHAPTER X

THE BEGINNING OF EXPERIMENTS

After the renewal of the correspondence with Miss Johnson in February, 1905, Mrs. Holland's automatism entered upon a new phase, her correspondent having suggested a series of experiments to take place between her and Mrs. Verrall. These experiments confirm what has been said above of Mrs. Holland's faculty to obtain impressions about Mrs. Verrall, at the same time showing that the latter, though in a lesser degree, possessed the same faculty with regard to Mrs. Holland. At this time there was no personal acquaintance between the two automatists, nor did any of them know who her fellow-experimenter was.

It was arranged that the two ladies on Wednesday, March 1st, 1905, and on the following five Wednesdays, but at the time of day that was most convenient to each of them, ought to try for automatic writing. There was no attempt made to produce a definite word or idea in the other's script. The experiment must be characterized as "intentional perception without intentional transmission." On the first Wednesday Mrs. Holland wrote as follows:

March 1st, 1905, 10.45 *a.m.*

"There are cut flowers in the blue jar—jonquils I think and tulips—growing tulips near the window—A dull day but the sky hints at Spring and one chirping bird is heard about the roar of the traffic—

"'Watch ye stand fast in the faith—quit you like men be strong'——

"Does Mrs. V. own herself worsted for once? Or does she wait for a triumph in May—The Banks in May! Ah me Earth's glamour holds—

"A slender lady with dark hair drawn to a heavy knot at

the base of her long throat. Eyes like dark jewels in a pale pale face—the outline of it 'hollowed a little mournfully.' A very sensitive mouth—Long hands—a signet ring on the middle finger——"

This is a series of supernormal impressions concerning Mrs. Verrall. It begins with a fairly correct description of the flowers in her drawing-room. On asking, Miss Johnson received the following reply from her: "On March 1st the only cut flowers in my drawing-room were in two blue china jars on the mantelpiece; the flowers were large single daffodils. On the ledge of the window looking into the greenhouse—on the greenhouse side—were three pots of growing yellow tulips——." On the other hand, the writer cannot have had Mrs. Verrall's residence in mind when referring to the roar of the traffic; there is no traffic in Selwyn Gardens, which is not a thoroughfare.

The described lady is evidently Mrs. Verrall herself. The question, "Does Mrs. V. own herself worsted for once?" might imply that the script connected her with the envelope failure. But it is very unlikely that it would speak with such want of sympathy about anything that concerned Myers. The remark is probably due to a general impression of failure, and to nothing more. Mrs. Holland, then, has obtained impressions supernormally of the drawing-room of her unknown colleague, of her appearance and name, and of some disappointment connected with her.

Besides this, the script quotes the "Selwyn text," or rather the whole of the verse 1 Cor. xvi. 13; the two words "be strong" are not included in the Greek inscription over the gate of Selwyn College. Mrs. Holland had in the morning of March 1st read the beginning of 1 Corinthians xvi.; when she continued her reading the next morning she noticed that xvi. 13 had been quoted in her writing the day before. It is highly probable, though, that she had seen the verse without knowing on March 1st, and that she subconsciously at least had known that it was the same text which had been referred to formerly.

As the reference was on that occasion associated with a perception of Mrs. Verrall, it is only natural that the verse was now quoted in connection with her. That the last two words were added was a simple consequence of Mrs. Holland's knowledge of the verse. It emerged as an impression about Mrs. Verrall, not specially as the Selwyn text, which the automatist hardly knew.

As regards Mrs. Verrall, her script of March 1st, 1905, written at 6 p.m., contains the following :

" v. iii black letter text . . . .
Don't identify it might alarm her."

The first words may be due to a vague impression about Mrs. Holland. The latter thought, when told of them, that they must refer to 1 Cor. xvi. 3, which she had read on the same morning and which runs : " For I verily, as absent in body, but present in spirit . . . " If these words have consciously or unconsciously impressed her specially, it might possibly increase the chance of their being caught by Mrs. Verrall. But she would hardly have been impressed with the number of the verse. More likely it is the quotation of the Bible text in Mrs. Holland's script that has been reflected—if a vague correspondence like that can be considered more than an accident.

The second phrase is in itself quite meaningless, but a very natural outcome of Mrs. Verrall's knowledge of the co-operation of another automatist.

None of the writings on the two following Wednesdays contained anything intimating supernormal connection. But on the latter day Mrs. Verrall had written as follows :

March 15th, 1905.
" Send these five notes [*drawing of five notes*].
" She will send you something like them—verse I think——"

On March 19th, her script once more contained notes, and on the following Wednesday Mrs. Holland wrote as follows :

March 22nd, 1905.
" The ivory gate through which all good dreams come.

"Sono molto fatigato e ammalatto [*sic*]—Ho paura [I am very tired and ill—I am frightened]——[*drawing of six notes*]."

This represents impressions both of Mrs. Verrall's script, namely of the notes, and of her occupations. She had on March 19th and 20th spent a great deal of her time in looking up descriptions by Virgil and Dante of the "gate of hell," and in the course of so doing read the passage in the sixth *Aeneid* about the gates of horn and ivory and about the true dreams—which, however, came through the former, not, as Mrs. Holland has it, through the ivory gate. On the same two days she was reading Italian for the first time for months. So many correspondences cannot be due to chance.

Meanwhile Mrs. Verrall, too, had caught an impression about Mrs. Holland. It was not on a Wednesday, but on a Sunday :

March 19th, 1905, 6.50 *p.m.*

"That lady has gone to church—go into her house with me —up 3 stairs on the left into a room—and over the mantelpiece hangs a picture a photograph Ruskin has written of it— Carpaccio's Ursula —— She does not want us in her room— come away—you have seen the Ursula which I meant to show you——"

This little story has a supernormal perception for its foundation. On asking, Miss Johnson was told in a letter from Mrs. Holland that she was not at church on Sunday evening, March 19th, and that the Dream of St. Ursula did not hang in her room. "But," she added, "on Saturday evening I was going through the portfolio of 'Great Masters,' and the Carpaccio Ursula was the picture I looked at longest and returned to most frequently —so much so, indeed, that my father asked me if I would like to have it framed and hung in my room."

In the same letter, dated March 24th, Mrs. Holland sent to Miss Johnson the description of an impression that had come to her very strongly within the last days. It was not automatically written, and she did not know why the impression had come into her mind. She did

not seem to suspect that she had twice before tried to describe the same lady in her script. The impression was as follows :

" A thin woman, not very young ; at least the further side of thirty. Her dark hair is slightly rough or naturally fluffy and begins to show threads of grey over the ears. She often wears a *pince nez* with either no frame or a very slight one. She has lost a great many people she loved both relatives and friends, and the trinkets she habitually wears are more relics than ornaments. A ring, a gold chain, both very full of memories. Grey eyes ; the black lashes almost close when she laughs. Grey dresses, green dresses, simply made—often with wide belts. Not a ' tailor-made ' woman. Critical ; a little too incisive in manner ; with a warm heart and a curiously unexpected fund of shyness. Very well educated. Her college career was attended with a good deal of distinction. She is very highly strung ; but too self-controlled to be called ' nervous.' The mouth has mobile lips and she has a trick of contracting the lower lip of which she is probably unconscious. Reserved to a fault. She is beginning to attain to a faith she once thought she had outgrown."

The fullness of this description excludes all possibility of chance coincidence. With the exception of the colour of the eyes and lashes it seems in all points to fit Mrs. Verrall, even to the trick of drawing in her lower lip, a habit contracted on account of a criticism made on her in her childhood. As for the description of her character, Miss Johnson thinks that " her friends would consider it in many points very apt."

This impression was the last real success occurring during the period of experimenting. On the sixth Wednesday, Mrs. Verrall's script seemed to reflect vaguely Mrs. Holland's surroundings—a gate in a hedge looking to the western sky, and a peaceful landscape. That was all.

Mrs. Holland's script of March 1st and 22nd, Mrs. Verrall's of March 19th, and the former's impression about her co-experimenter, were thus the essential result of the experiments on these six Wednesdays. Only two of the coincidences, however, occurred on the appointed days, and it must on the whole be said that the successes

seemed due more to the circumstance that the two psychics—as was formerly the case with Mrs. Verrall and Mrs. Forbes—had got into touch with each other than to their directing their thoughts towards each other. The reciprocal sensitiveness is of the same type as that which Mrs. Holland had displayed in India with regard to Mrs. Verrall. That it was "clairvoyance *à trois*," and that Miss Johnson was the intermediary, must then here as there be the one possible manner of interpreting it.

It is worth noting that a following series of experiments of another type was a decided failure. During the next six weeks, while Mrs. Holland was travelling on the Continent, she attempted every Wednesday to convey an impression and one definite word to her fellow-experimenter; but in no case did Mrs. Verrall's script show any coincidence with the topics selected. After this, Mrs. Verrall tried for a few weeks, with no better success, to convey ideas chosen by herself to Mrs. Holland. This is a repetition of what we experienced in former cases—that it is much more difficult for a sensitive to grasp what an agent strives to produce than to "perceive" what is not intended for transmission. Neither the *one-horse* nor the *stabdelta* experiment obtained a full success, though the attempts left distinct traces in Mrs. Verrall's script. But not even a faint trace was produced by the latter's exertions with regard to Mrs. Holland, nor the reverse; evidently the rapport between them was not strong enough for that, though permitting them to obtain supernormal impressions about each other's doings.

. . . . . .

In the following autumn Mrs. Holland became personally acquainted with Miss Johnson. On October 6th, 1905, the two ladies met for the first time in the rooms of the Society for Psychical Research in London and had a long conversation. On November 16th, Mrs. Holland met Mrs. Verrall at the same place in the presence of the

secretary; on November 21st she spoke with the latter alone. After this she did not see her until February 21st, 1906, when Mrs. Verrall and Mr. Piddington were also present.

To this first period of the personal acquaintance with Miss Johnson belong some pieces of Mrs. Holland's script which, in the opinion of Miss Johnson, strongly suggest an influence from herself.

In the *Spectator* for October 7th, 1905, Mrs. Holland had read a review of Dr. Maxwell's book *Metapsychical Phenomena;* it is, Miss Johnson says, clearly responsible for much of the matter of the script produced during this period. But although Mrs. Holland had read the review at any rate before October 27th, when she spoke of it in a letter to Miss Johnson, it was not until several weeks later that the script touched on the topic.

On November 19th, 1905, Miss Johnson had spent most of the morning in looking out for Mr. Everard Feilding, who was going to Paris to attend some sittings with Eusapia Paladino, her own records of the sittings at Cambridge with this medium. In the afternoon of the same day Mr. Feilding was with her discussing the matter.

It was on this day that Mrs. Holland's script commenced a series of remarks about psychical phenomena, put into the mouth now of Myers and now of Gurney; for instance, the following:

November 19th, 1905, 11 *a.m.*

"The phenomena that will shortly be induced are utterly misleading—They will not be completely fraudulent—at least not consciously so—but the influence will be of the poltergeist type and the lowest forms of physical magnetism will be called upon——

November 20th, 1905.

"The properties apertaining [*sic*] to the deception will be daringly simple—the old familiar trickery —— There will be a piece of elastic in his shirt sleeve—No—nothing so elaborate as a pneumatic glove —— Of course there is a great substratum of truth but those two people won't help you to arrive at it.

The man is a charlatan—and the woman—though with a good deal of sincerity at first has lost it through vanity and the desire for effectiveness——

" [?] Palladia — Mrs. Eustace Lucas — Annie Bird — Euphronia—Katie King—Eustonia—Pallonia—"

Miss Johnson thinks that these descriptions of fraudulent phenomena may have been partly due to " a vague telepathic reflection " of her conversation with Mr. Feilding.

On November 21st, Mrs. Holland brought her the script in question ; she asked her then what she had read about physical phenomena, but of course told her nothing of her own views as to these. The conversation seems to have given the impulse to some pieces of script in the beginning of December where Miss Johnson is introduced, nay where it is said that she " will be the best help in this case."

This of course involves nothing supernormal. The remarkable point is this, that when Mrs. Holland's script after a long interval once more spoke of physical phenomena, it was again after a conversation between Miss Johnson and Mr. Feilding about the subject. On March 13th, 1906, the secretary had received a paper containing an attack on the Algerian " materializations " reported by Professor Richet ; either on the same or on the next day she discussed the matter with Mr. Feilding. Mrs. Holland's script on this occasion contained among other things the following :

March 14th, 1906.

" It is a pity R [ichet] has no sense of humour but not unusual for his nationality. It gives him a certain power too—some of us were too whimsical perhaps are——"

This is followed by further remarks about fraudulent performances. In all probability Mrs. Holland had in the course of the winter read or heard more of physical phenomena than what she had gained from the review in *The Spectator*. The whole topic was, as Miss Johnson writes, very much in the air at that time. But that her

script started the subject just when it was occupying Miss Johnson's mind and conversation, and recurred to it after an interval of more than three months, just at the moment when she was once more discussing it, is a double coincidence which can hardly be due to chance, but which adds to the evidence for Mrs. Holland's faculty of obtaining supernormal impressions from other persons.

. . . . . .

On December 20th, 1905, Dr. Richard Hodgson, the ardent psychical researcher who had for many years supervised the sittings with Mrs. Piper, died suddenly in Boston. Mrs. Holland knew his name at least from *Human Personality*. On January 22nd, 1906, she learned through a newspaper paragraph that he had "died at Boston a month ago." This was all that she, to the best of her belief, had heard about it.

About this time Mrs. Holland had the feeling that her mediumism showed a tendency to enter upon a new phase. She told this to Miss Johnson in a letter which she sent her together with a piece of script of February 9th, printed below. For some time, she said, a few moments of writing had made her feel at once very sleepy and very loquacious. She fancied that under favourable conditions her automatic writing would change into trance or semi-trance conditions with spoken words instead of written ones. A few times, just before falling asleep at night, she had heard fragments of speech which she knew were not real, and she ascribed them to a possible new attempt at communication.

Whether this state—which did not develop further—was of any consequence with regard to the script, can hardly be determined. It has seemed natural to mention it as the automatist herself laid so much stress upon it.

Under these circumstances the following script was produced :

February 9th, 1906.

"... Sjdibse Ipehtpo—only one letter further on—

18	8
9	15
3	4
8	7
1	19
18	15
4	14

"They are not haphazard figures read them as letters—

"The shortness of breath was the worst part of the illness —worse even than the exhaustion—

"K. 57. Jessie—Grey paper—

"The (?) straggler (?) returns—a printed address on the sheet of paper—Three small lines of writing—a wide margin left—I cannot make it clear to you.

"*Concentrate hard.*

"_____

_____

_____" [1] 3 initials.

"Nothing else upon the sheet—

"It's a wide prospect from the windows—

"A gold watch chain with a horse-shoe shaped cigar cutter attached to it—An old seal not his own initials—A white handled knife inkstained—

"Nitrate of amyl—probably too late even if it had been thought of—

"A corpse needs no shoes—"

When the direction of the script is followed, and the letters are replaced by those preceding them in the alphabet, they give the name *Richard Hodgson*, while the numbers read as letters give the same name. As we know, Mrs. Holland had as a child played at a secret language made by using either the letter before or the letter after the real one. Besides, her script had always shown a tendency to mystification. A similar tendency is said to have characterized Dr. Hodgson; but this coincidence, of course, loses all importance, as the same quality is displayed by the other alleged controls of Mrs. Holland.

The whole script, however, seems less fabricated than Mrs. Holland's productions used to be. It appears to

[1] The three lines represent writing which is too vague for identification.

consist of a series of impressions put loosely down. They are all of them of a nature that makes it possible to connect them with Dr. Hodgson, and they are just as correct as supernormal impressions use to be, *i.e.*, there are some incorrect things interspersed here and there. An illness is mentioned, with shortness of breath; Dr. Hodgson died of heart-failure while playing a game of handball, with no preceding illness; but "nitrate of amyl," which is mentioned with the addition that it probably would have been too late even if it had been thought of, is given for heart-failure. "The wide prospect from the windows" may refer to the Union Boat Club in Boston, where Dr. Hodgson died; its windows overlook the Back Bay to some hills beyond. Dr. Hodgson wore a gold watch chain with a gold cigar-cutter, but the latter was not horseshoe shaped. He had an old seal which had a female figure cut on it, but it was not worn by him at the time of his death.

One of these things, the cause of death, Mrs. Holland no doubt might have heard or read about without knowing. Most of the remaining statements are too indefinite or common to be of much value. This, however, does not apply to the name *Jessie* or to the mystic "K. 57." Jessie[1] was the first name of Dr. Hodgson's much beloved cousin, who died in Australia in 1879. She is mentioned in the records of the sittings with Mrs. Piper by the pseudonym *Q*; Mrs. Piper's control Phinuit had once remarked that the second part of her first name was *sie*; afterwards Dr. Hodgson had told him her full name, but this had not been published. And in a still more remarkable manner "K. 57" seems to point to Dr. Hodgson.

During April and May, 1906, Mr. Piddington was in Boston to assist in the arrangement of Dr. Hodgson's affairs as the representative of the Society for Psychical Research. Miss Johnson sent him a copy of the above script, asking him to make inquiries about the divers

[1] The name is not given in Miss Johnson's report, but has been published later.

particulars contained in it. After the reception of her letter, Mr. Piddington found among Dr. Hodgson's papers a dilapidated note-book, on the front cover of which was written "The Eternal Life," while inside, on two loose sheets, Dr. Hodgson had made notes for an article which he had probably intended to write in answer to Professor Hugo Münsterberg's book of that name. On the back cover of this note-book he had written in pencil as follows :

"R.H.	R.H.
1	K–6
4	K 52
6	K 8
3	3
4	K 6
52	K 6
K–11	K 7
K–52	K 52
10	K 13
K–30	7
	3

"Mr. [or Mrs.] C.
8
14
2
7
7
10

Mr. Piddington declares that he feels "practically certain that K followed by numerals refers to some particular series of Piper sittings, or to some particular subject of the communications." At any rate, it is indisputable that the said combination had some significance for Dr. Hodgson. In Mrs. Holland's script of February 9th, "K. 57" and "Jessie" are followed by a reference to a grey paper. This would agree with the conception of "K. 57" as the designation of some memorandum. The passage about the sheet of paper, etc., perhaps points to the same, but it is too vague to found anything upon.

But in any case it can hardly be denied that this combination of references to Dr. Hodgson, "K. 57," and

Jessie, is more than can be ascribed to chance. As regards " K. 57," the explanation cryptomnesia, moreover, is quite excluded. But if we must assume a supernormal impression to be the cause, from whence does it originate? Nobody with whom Mrs. Holland can be supposed to be in rapport, and perhaps no living person, knew of the designations which the cover of his note-book shows Dr. Hodgson to have used. That Mrs. Holland through direct clairvoyance might read them in Boston, nothing justifies us in asserting. Thus it must suffice to say that we have here met with a phenomenon which we are unable to place under the categories which we have hitherto acknowledged;[1] as it is so solitary and slender, it would be rash to make it the base of any theory.

Mrs. Holland's script held a few more references to Dr. Hodgson in the following period. But they do not contain anything that might not be due to cryptomnesia; besides, she had on February 21st talked of him with Miss Johnson, and had no doubt got an impulse to write about him that detracts from the significance of her productions; her attitude of mind is seen in a letter of March 11th where she, referring to a date given in her script, writes: " How glad I should be if the date given was a definite bit of evidence from Dr. Hodgson." For completeness' sake, however, I quote the pieces in question:

February 28th, 1906.

" Dickon of Norfolk—is that far enough away from the real name? I'll describe R H [in monogram].

" A short man—but held himself well—broad shoulders—

[1] The explanation which Dr. Maxwell [see his paper in the *Proceedings* S.P.R., Vol. XXVI., pp. 57—144] tries to give of " K. 57 " is quite insufficient. " La lettre L," he says, " est employée, suivie d'un numéro pour désigner une certaine catégorie d'hallucinations locales. Or, la lettre K precède immediatement la lettre L; une substitution analogue à celle qui dissimule le nom de M. Hodgson au commencement du texte l'explique bien simplement." But there can be no analogy between a substitution that is intended to mystify, and the exchange of one indifferent letter for another. Besides, there is no reason why Mrs. Holland should use the letter L. And to the connection in which " K. 57 " occurs, Dr. Maxwell pays no attention. " K. 37 " in a later script is probably an echo of " K. 57."

thick grey white hair—thick grey brows—*very* straight—A florid face—reddish brown—(though it was pale enough at the end). Strong chin—mobile mouth.

" The young wife died so long ago—that perhaps some people forgot her. Jessie."

About the description, if applied to Dr. Hodgson, Mr. Piddington says that it is neither very good nor very bad. Mrs. Holland had never seen a portrait of him; but she may, no doubt, have heard him mentioned. " Jessie " is probably a reminiscence from the former script. The term " wife " is incorrect; she was not the wife of Dr. Hodgson, and is not known to have been married.

March 7th, 1906.

" Brittleworth—Brickeldale. Britleton—No—not him and not James—Brit—Brittle Brick Brickleton—Hugo—H.M.—Minster Berg. Hugo.

" Was he not aware?

" R.

" Why are they so brutally dense.

" H.

" I always had a quick temper."

There is, of course, nothing supernormal in connecting Dr. Hodgson with Professor James or Professor Münsterberg, who were both well known within the pale of psychical research. Neither can I agree with Miss Johnson when she speaks about the " various attempts made at the name Hugo Münsterberg " as a possible result of a " telepathic effort," comparable with Dr. Verrall's experiment. It is not the name Münsterberg that is sought for; it is, on the contrary, given without groping, and has nothing to do with the preceding attempts at Brittleworth, etc.

May 16th, 1906.

" When the deep red blood of the maple leaf
Burns on the boughs again.

" Spring on a Boston hillside. One clump of maples stands alone—they are outlined against the sunset and the sunset is no redder than they.—R. H."

In respect to this script, an American friend of Dr. Hodgson says: " The foliage of one of our maples turns

a very brilliant red in the autumn, and its minute flowers are a most brilliant red in the spring." Miss Johnson adds that this spring red, which is specially referred to in the script, is probably a far less familiar fact to English people than the autumn red, and that Mrs. Holland believed that she had never heard of it. But this, of course, is one of the things which it is quite impossible to be sure of. That she must subconsciously connect Boston with Dr. Hodgson goes without saying.

. . . . . .

In the spring of 1906, Mrs. Holland undertook a few experiments which Miss Johnson in her report calls "Experiments on the supposed influence of inanimate objects." Mrs. Verrall's script of March 7th, 1906, had among other things contained the sentence: "Send [Mrs. Holland] something of yours, a ring, that would help her." The suggestion interested Mrs. Holland, who had received from Miss Johnson a copy of the script, and she expressed her wish to borrow for a few weeks a ring from Mrs. Verrall; one that she had had a long time would be the best, she added. Evidently Mrs. Holland, just as when at an earlier time she asked for Miss Johnson's paper and penholder, was guided by an instinctive understanding of the significance of "articles." That Mrs. Verrall subconsciously had the same understanding, the above script of March 7th testifies. A characteristic contrast to this presents the non-mediumistic secretary, who scorns the notion that objects might have influence.

The first result of the experiment with the ring has been referred to above;[1] only it was probably due to the letter from Mrs. Verrall that accompanied the ring rather than to the object itself. Mrs. Holland received it by the first post on the morning of March 15th, and immediately afterwards had an impression which she noted down at once and sent to Mrs. Verrall. The latter on the same day left her home for a round of visits; Mrs. Holland did

[1] See p. 122.

not know where she was going ; she had written that her letters would be forwarded. The impression was as follows :

March 15th, 1906, 8.45 *a.m.*

" A dining room, narrow for its height, a long room. Dull red paper on the wall ; brown wood dado or high wainscot. A great deal of brass about the fireplace. Table laid for a meal, bright fire. Something Egyptian in the room, or else ornaments of an ' Egyptian pattern.' Lady in brown dress reading letter. Is it Mrs. V. ? An elaborate coffee-making machine and a silver urn. Green-handled knives. Honeycomb. Indian tree patterned china."

In her letter to Mrs. Verrall she added : " The lady in brown hardly seemed to be you, but the room had to do with you."

Mrs. Verrall was on that day going to Mrs. Forbes's house, where she arrived at about 5.45 p.m. Mrs. Holland, as before said, was ignorant of this, and she knew nothing whatever about Mrs. Forbes ; Mrs. Verrall's report in which the latter plays a large part, had not yet been published. The described room was, however, indisputably the dining-room of that lady as it looked on the morning of March 15th. The greater part of the particulars are quite correct; on the other hand, a small amount of errors have slipped in, as is usually the case with clairvoyant impressions. As a characteristic instance of their vagueness may be mentioned Mrs. Holland's uncertainty whether there was an Egyptian object in the room, or only ornaments of an Egyptian pattern. In fact, there were both; Mrs. Forbes states that the most conspicuous and distinctive object in the room is a large Cairene screen which has the regular Egyptian pattern work in dark wood.

Mrs. Verrall, of course, was not in the room. There were two ladies in the house besides Mrs. Forbes ; one of them wore a conspicuously brown dress—brown tweed, brown shoes and stockings. They had breakfasted at a little after eight.

Such was the prelude to the real experiments. The

significance of Mrs. Holland being able to obtain an impression about the surroundings of a stranger through an "article"—letter or ring—sent by an acquaintance of that stranger, has been spoken about. Moreover, as Mrs. Verrall had never seen the brown lady when Mrs. Holland described her, it can be established beyond the shade of a doubt that the impression was not due to telepathy, but presents an uncommonly clear instance of clairvoyance by means of an intermediary.

Mrs. Holland's first script written while holding Mrs. Verrall's ring consisted of a series of impressions more or less veridical, interspersed with reflections. To the ring itself the following seems to refer :

March 17th, 1906.

"It dates from more than twenty years ago —— One of the first among the wedding gifts."

Both statements, however, may be due to subconscious guessing. The ring had been sent in its original case, marked with the initials of Mrs. Verrall while unmarried ; it had been given to her on her last birthday before her marriage, partly as a birthday and partly as a wedding present. A description of her character followed, but is of course of minor interest after Mrs. Holland had made her acquaintance.

The most interesting portion of this script, no doubt, are some remarks which seem to apply to the circumstances of Mrs. Forbes. And in a script produced some days later while Mrs. Holland was wearing Mrs. Verrall's ring, there are several things which seem due to impressions about Mrs. Forbes's house, where Mrs. Verrall was now staying. For instance, the following :

March 21st, 1906.

"Two windows in the room—one very much smaller than the other—Yes you can see the river.

"The honeysuckle is all right but the Jap passion flower died in the frost——

"There is gold inlay on the blade—the hilt is very worn—It's in the hall——"

There are two windows in Mrs. Forbes's drawing-room, one a large bow, the other a small window. There is a stream in the garden which can be seen from one of these windows. There is honeysuckle outside the window on the house, and there was a *Pyrus Japonica*, but all except a small shoot had died. No passion flower.

On the day when the script was written, Mrs. Verrall asked Mrs. Forbes if she possessed an inlaid musket. Mrs. Forbes said she had an inlaid weapon of another kind, and brought it in from the hall. It was a dagger, part of which was much worn.

But of course these impressions are less remarkable than the one of March 15th, when Mrs. Verrall was not in the place. Whether they had anything to do with the ring, it is impossible to decide. It must be remembered that they were obtained by Mrs. Holland when writing automatically, that is, in a state which in itself makes the sensitive susceptible of impressions. Moreover, Mrs. Holland was beforehand in touch with Mrs. Verrall, who in this case was the owner of the article.

The next experiments, however, were made with objects that belonged to Mrs. Forbes, whom Mrs. Holland did not know. Through Miss Johnson a glove was sent her, and while holding it she wrote the following :

March 31st, 1906.

" The greenhouse looks neglected now.

" There is a dull sound like a rushing river some distance away——

" God will forgive thee all but thy despair.

April 1st, 1906.

" Lincoln. The bronze is out of place it should be on the shelf again."

Besides, she saw on the first day in a crystal among other things " a small statuette—not at all clear—of a woman with outstretched arms." She thought it was a Madonna.

There is a greenhouse opening into Mrs. Forbes's drawing-room. She can hear the noise of a stream at

night when she leans from her window. The quotation, "God will forgive thee all but thy despair," is from Frederic Myers's poem *St. Paul*, and Mrs. Forbes had known it since she was twenty and "felt with" it very strongly.

She had taken a little bronze statuette of *Washington* to be mended, so it was missing from its place. A statuette of Victory, with outstretched arms, stands on her writing-table.

As usual, impressions or remarks of a non-veridical kind were interwoven. To the errors that characterize clairvoyance belongs "Lincoln" instead of Washington.

On May 15th, Mrs. Holland's script contained, without connection with any article, a description of a man, identified as Mr. Forbes. Details like the following were given: "His right hand is holding his left ankle—inelegant but characteristic——His eyes have a trick of half shutting when he talks earnestly." Mrs. Verrall testifies to the correctness of the description, saying among other things: "He almost closes his eyes when he speaks——I have certainly seen him hold his left ankle in his right hand."

The concluding experiment consisted in Mrs. Holland receiving, through Miss Johnson, a glove that had been worn by Mrs. Forbes's deceased son, "Talbot," and a Japanese bronze bird which he had kept on his mantelpiece at school. She did not know that the objects came from the same person as the glove sent before. As a matter of fact, she thought that they belonged to Mr. Everard Feilding, whose acquaintance she had made some time before.

While holding these objects she wrote:

May 22nd, 1906.

"In my own room—where the deep green colour predominates—and a trifle becomes a relic——"

The small room in which Mrs. Forbes writes is papered with a deep green colour. In it she had collected all the

little possessions of her son. The bronze bird came from the chimney piece there.

On the next day, at the end of a script which showed no connection with Mrs. Forbes, came the phrases :

May 23rd, 1906.

"The Winged Victory. Lime blossoms wait for June—The sleepy bird has waked its way."

The bronze bird had its head turned round and lying back, as if asleep ; "the sleepy bird" thus seems to indicate that the passage referred to its owner. Mrs. Forbes had given the "winged Victory" of Pompeii to the chapel of her son's school as a memorial of him.

This last case seems to indicate that the objects are not without influence ; the earlier references to Mrs. Forbes had had nothing to do with her son, save indirectly through allusions to her grief. Miss Johnson suggests that Mrs. Forbes may have thought specially of him after having sent the articles to be psychometrized ; but as her mind was always full of him, this does not seem a sufficient explanation of the coincidence. The objects themselves could tell Mrs. Holland nothing ; moreover, she fancied that they came from Mr. Feilding.

This opinion, for the rest, had a curious consequence. The script which she produced on May 22nd, while holding Talbot's glove and bird, began as follows :

"But it should not have been cleaned—

"It is the wiring—the electric lighting in the John St. house that is dangerous—the terms of the fire insurance too need supervising—Denbigh."

The first remark of course refers to the glove. But the next sentences are connected with Mr. Feilding, who lived in John Street and was the brother of Lord Denbigh. Mrs. Holland had met him at a dinner, and though she was confident that she had not heard either the address of his house or the name of his brother, it is possible that without consciously noticing she may have heard both things mentioned. But it is *not* possible that she could know of a matter which Mr. Feilding himself did not

know, but discovered when, in view of her statement, he had the electric system in his house tested—that there was a very serious leakage which might have proved dangerous. As to the fire insurance, Mr. Feilding had lately thought of getting the policies supervised.

In this case, then, Mrs. Holland had produced veridical statements referring to a person whom she knew slightly and had in mind at the moment, but with whom she was not otherwise connected—unless Miss Johnson's letter that accompanied the objects was " the line." One of these statements, moreover, referred to something which nobody knew, and must be called clairvoyance in a true sense, if it were permissible to disregard the possibility that it was the thought of the fire insurance which led up to it, and that it was only by chance that it coincided with a real fact.

The last incident has, of course, nothing to do with the possible influence of articles. But as Mrs. Holland's impressions are obtained while she is writing automatically, there is, as intimated above, no reason why they should refer only to persons connected with the objects. These may be one of the sources of her impressions, but nothing more.

Miss Johnson, who does not believe in psychometry, points out that the veridical statements in Mrs. Holland's script " had little or nothing to do with the past history of the objects, but were concerned rather with the past or present doings or surroundings of their owners." This is true, but quite consistent with what psychometrists themselves believe that articles can effect—namely, give impressions about the owners and their circumstances; they can sometimes tell whether the object has had more than one owner, but that is of course the same thing.

Furthermore, Miss Johnson insists that the whole series of experiments " is of just the same character as the writings produced without any such objects," and that the veridical statements " point far more to telepathy

from Mrs. Verrall, Mrs. Forbes, or Mr. Feilding than to any influence emanating from the objects."

As regards the first point, I believe, as said above, that at least Talbot Forbes's objects had some influence. But the boundary is no doubt floating when the would-be psychometrist is beforehand in touch with the owners of the articles, as Mrs. Holland was with Mrs. Forbes already through Mrs. Verrall. Pure psychometry we cannot expect to find unless the object belongs to some one with whom the psychic is not otherwise connected, and even then the statements ought not to be given through automatic writing.

But even if it be in the above cases unjustifiable to ascribe the results to the objects, it would be wholly misleading to ascribe them to telepathy. The statements point to clairvoyant impressions about the persons concerned; they were not agents, but, no doubt, as passive as the objects themselves.

CHAPTER XI

CROSS-CORRESPONDENCES

MEANWHILE, in February, 1906, there had begun a new series of experiments of the same type as in the preceding spring; on a certain day of the week, Wednesday, Mrs. Holland and Mrs. Verrall were both to try to get automatic script. The result was, as in 1905, divers supernormal allusions to the circumstances of the writer's co-experimenter. Besides, in a far higher degree than in the preceding year, the script of one automatist, usually Mrs. Holland's, gave a sort of reflex of something which the other had produced. The same can in 1905 only be said with certainty to have happened once, namely when the notes in Mrs. Verrall's script of March 15th and 19th were reflected in Mrs. Holland's of March 22nd.

Miss Johnson distinguishes sharply between the two types: those in which one automatist refers to events happening to the other, or to some feature in her surroundings, and those in which references to the same topic occur *in the scripts* of both writers. It is to the latter type only that she applies the term cross-correspondence.

I shall in the following dwell exclusively on this type, which got to play a very important part in the later experimenting, and review all cases from this first period of its existence.

In an ordinary sense it was hardly of any consequence that the two automatists now knew each other; nothing indicates that the cross-correspondences were a result of their thoughts running along the same lines. On the other hand, the supernormal rapport between them had no doubt grown stronger with their personal acquaintance.

Perhaps, also, the circumstance that they desired their writings to correspond may have strengthened the rapport. That they were animated by such a desire is seen from Mrs. Verrall's script of February 19th, 1906: "When you see the same in the other scripts with your own eyes, you will have belief in my words"; and from a letter to her of April 17th from Mrs. Holland, who says that she cannot help believing that they will be "tuned into accord some day and register the same messages." They believed that such a correspondence would testify to the scripts originating from Myers or other spirits.

The first series of experiments covered the seven weeks from February 28th to April 11th. Of the writings which showed some correspondence, those of Mrs. Verrall generally preceded those of Mrs. Holland, and were not always written on a Wednesday. This, on the contrary, was always the case with Mrs. Holland's script, and on all of the seven Wednesdays something occurred in it which at any rate *might* be taken to refer to something written by Mrs. Verrall. Most often, however, the script contained a quantity of other matter. I quote only the most necessary passages, beginning always with the script of Mrs. Holland.

1. Electra.

February 28th, 1906, 2 *p.m.*

"*No* not in the Electra. M. will know better."

"M" stands for Margaret, *i.e.*, Mrs. Verrall. The latter's script of the preceding weeks contained the following:

February 9th, 1906.

"Tell her this [*in Greek:*] Be sorrow sorrow spoken, but let the good prevail——

February 20th, 1906.

"Get her to write [*in Greek:*] sorrow sorrow——

February 28th, 1906, 11.15 *p.m.*

"[*In Greek:*] Be sorrow sorrow spoken, but let the good prevail."

The script from the day set off for experimenting,

February 28th, is hardly more than a repetition of the preceding ones. Mrs. Holland's remark about "Electra" *may* be due to the other's Greek quotation. This comes from Æschylus' *Agamemnon*, but Mrs. Holland's impression had evidently not got beyond "Greek tragedy," and she could do no more than indicate this impression through her rejection of the *Electra*. That just this tragedy was mentioned is no doubt accounted for by the circumstance that Euripides' *Electra* was being performed in London at about this time. The addition about "M" who would know better, perhaps points to a subconscious recognition of the source of the impression; if so, it corresponds to Mrs. Verrall's former remarks about her husband during his experiment. But it may, of course, be due solely to Mrs. Holland's preoccupation with her co-experimenter.

2. Ave Roma.

March 7th, 1906.

"Not enough bulbs—and it's a pity the quincetree has suffered so.

"Ave Roma immortalis [Hail immortal Rome]. How could I make it any clearer without giving her the clue?

"How cold it was that winter—Even snow in Rome—we might have stayed at home for that—

"The sunshine has brought out the bees before the tulips are ready for them—"

It is the passage *Ave Roma immortalis* that is important in this script. The context makes it probable that it has to do with Mrs. Verrall; on March 7th the latter went to the Botanical Gardens to see the bulbs, because on that morning her own garden was full of bees, and she knew bees meant open bulbs. About this Mrs. Holland thus seems to have caught an impression, and "Ave Roma" perhaps has come along with it. The allusion to "snow in Rome" is no doubt owing to her knowledge that Myers died in Rome in the month of January; it is a memory that emerges at the mention of Rome.[1]

[1] Dr. Maxwell, in his above-mentioned paper, contends that "Ave Roma," on the contrary, is due to the thought of Myers's death in Rome. But then there is no ground for the emergence of this thought.

Mrs. Verrall's corresponding writings are the following :

March 2nd, 1906.

" [*In Latin :*] Not with such help will you find what you want ; not with such help, nor with those defenders of yours —— First among his peers, himself not unmindful of his name ; with him a brother related in feeling, though not in blood. Both these will send a word to you through another woman. After some days you will easily understand what I say.

March 4th, 1906.

" Pagan and pope. The Stoic persecutor and the Christian. Gregory not Basil's friend ought to be a clue but you have it not quite right.

" *Pagan* and *Pope* and *Reformer* all enemies as you think. [*In Latin :*] The cross has a meaning. The cross-bearer who one day is borne. [*In English :*] The standard-bearer is the link.

March 5th, 1906.

" [*In Latin :*] The club-bearer [or key-bearer] with the lion's skin already well described before this in the writings. Some things are to be corrected. [*In English :*] Ask your husband, he knows it well."

The script of March 2nd, of course, refers to Mrs. Holland and to the much desired cross-correspondence, " the word to be sent through another woman." But it is not clear who is meant by " Primus inter pares," the first among his peers, or by the brother related in feeling though not in blood. If the script had stood alone, it would have been natural to guess that the expression was due to a conception of Myers and Gurney as the brethren who would send the word ; very probably Mrs. Verrall might subconsciously take *Primus inter pares* to mean Myers. But the waking Mrs. Verrall made no such conjecture, and as she did not know to whom the description referred, she asked her husband about it. Dr. Verrall told her that the Pope is thus described, adding, when his wife had read the script for him, that he saw what it was driving at. It reminded him of— what he did not, however, mention until March 11th— Raphael's famous picture of Attila, terrified by the vision of St. Peter and St. Paul, when meeting Pope Leo, who went out to save Rome from the onslaught of the Huns.

The preceding quotation from the *Æneid*, which refers to the defence of Troy against the invading Greeks,[1] had contributed to recall the picture to his mind, doubtless, he says, only because he was specially familiar with it.

In fact, the designation " Primus inter pares," in connection with the phrase about the name which might suggest *Leo* (lion), seems to be the only thing that can lead to the supposition that the script is alluding to Raphael's picture. It is, for instance, quite uncertain to whom in that case the talk about the two brethren refers. When the Pope is one of them, it cannot be to the two apostles.

The script of March 4th, however, carried the matter a great step further. It not only expressed the idea of the Pope which Mrs. Verrall might have got normally from the conversation with her husband, but it had also got hold of the Pagan. To be sure, it is a pagan Emperor (the Stoic persecutor—Marcus Aurelius) it seems to allude to; but when it has been reminded through him of another persecutor (Julian Apostata), and thus has reached Gregory (Nazianzen), it protests against its own wanderings, and with an energetic " not Basil's friend," reverts to the thought about the Pope : " Gregory ought to be a clue." Through all this groping it arrives at something which really points to Raphael's picture, the cross-bearer and the standard-bearer. In the script of March 5th, this leads to the club-bearer with the lion's skin, *i.e.*, Hercules, which seems to be a confused result of the attempt to get hold of the key-bearer Leo.

" Ask your husband, he knows it well," the script concludes. One thing with another indicates that it is his thoughts about the picture which constitute the basis of the writings of March 4th and 5th. In this wise the script used to refer to him in the one-horse dawn case ; and his wife's faculty to obtain impressions from him

[1] The words are used by Hecuba when she sees the old Priam preparing himself for the defence. Has Mrs. Verrall subconsciously made a leap from *Priamus* to *Primus* ?

which he had not intended to transmit was sufficiently proved through the same case.

The script of March 4th, which Mrs. Holland's script of March 7th perhaps reflects, has thus an entirely human source. Of course, there is also the possibility that it is Dr. Verrall's thought, and not the script of his wife, that has influenced Mrs. Holland; but it is in this connection of less interest. The mysterious addition in Mrs. Holland's script: "How could I make it any clearer without giving her the clue?" is perhaps of the same kind as the various remarks about clues in Mrs. Verrall's writings, which originally expressed her subconscious sensation of groping her way, but which gradually became rather stereotyped. Or perhaps it was part of the impression received from Mrs. Verrall.[1] A tendency to mystification is, at any rate, characteristic of Mrs. Holland's own automatic writing; in the script produced on the next day for experimenting she speaks of the necessity of secretiveness in a connection where it is absolutely meaningless.

3. Roden Noel.

Mrs. Holland's first contribution to the next cross-correspondence was given in a script that was not produced on the day for experimenting, but on a Sunday:

March 11th, 1906.

"This is for A.W. [Verrall]. Ask him what the date May 26th 1894 meant to him—to me—and to F.W.H. [Myers]. I do not think they will find it hard to recall but if so—let them ask Nora.

"We no more solve the riddle of Death by dying than we solve the problem of Life by being born —— I seek still —— I am not oppressed with the desire that animates some of us to share our knowledge or optimism with you all before the time. You know who feels like that but I am content that you should wait ——"

[1] In the middle of April, 1906, Mrs. Holland saw some proofs of Mrs. Verrall's report on her own script. Before this she had seen a few of her writings, but hardly so much that she can have learned her mode of speech in that way.

On the ensuing Wednesday she wrote :

March 14th, 1906.

" Eighteen fifteen four five fourteen—Fourteen fifteen five twelve—Not to be taken as they stand. See Rev. 13–18—but only the central 8 words not the whole passage—It does not do to be clearer under existing circumstances . . . .

" H.S. [in monogram] R.N. [in monogram] June 1st 1881 (?) Surely you will not need to ask about that . . . ."

The script of March 11th purports to come from Professor Sidgwick ; " Nora " is Mrs. Sidgwick. The date is that of the death of his friend, the poet Roden Noel. The numbers in the script of March 14th constitute his name when read as letters. The eight central words in *Revelation*, xiii., 18, are " for it is the number of a man." *H.S.* and *R.N.*, of course, stand for Henry Sidgwick and Roden Noel. The date has found no interpretation.

Mrs. Holland had recently, before March 11th, in the *Westminster Gazette* and the *Daily Chronicle*, read two reviews of the *Memoir* of Professor Sidgwick ; one of these contained extracts from a letter by him to Frederic Myers, which, as Miss Johnson points out, is clearly the basis of the passage in the script that the writer is not animated by a desire to share his knowledge of life after death with the living. It is, then, safe to assume that the reading of these reviews has given the main impulse to the script. But as regards Roden Noel, the cause must be sought elsewhere, as his friendship with Professor Sidgwick, though mentioned in the *Memoir*, was not alluded to in the reviews.

The *Memoir* had appeared on February 27th, 1906, and Mrs. Verrall had been highly interested in its mention of two matters which seemed to have been referred to in her own script. One of these was a conversation between Professor Sidgwick and Sir George Trevelyan, the other was his opinion, expressed in a letter to Roden Noel, that hope of life after death is better than certainty. In neither of the two cases, however, were the references in her script congruent with the facts ; in all probability

they were due to cryptomnesia ; Mrs. Verrall might very well have heard the utterances, upon which her script is based, from the living Professor Sidgwick. While her thoughts were occupied with this matter, she automatically wrote the following verse :

March 7th, 1906.

" Tintagel and the sea that moaned in pain
And Arthur's mount uplifted from the plain
And crowding towers of quaint fantastic shape
Ah ! never more to see
The ripples dance
Nor hear again the roar
On smitten shore
Where the huge wave rolls on
Amid the salt and savour of the sea."

The verse bears much resemblance to Roden Noel's poem *Tintagel*. It was Miss Johnson who, at a much later date, discovered this circumstance. Mrs. Verrall did not think that she had ever read the poem, and Mrs. Holland, who saw the script before March 11th, had no conscious thought of connecting it with Roden Noel ; as far as she remembered she had only read a few of his poems in a collection of English verse.

Be that as it may, it seems all but certain that Mrs. Holland has got her impression about him either from Mrs. Verrall's script, by means of subconscious recognition of his verse, or else supernormally owing to her co-experimenter's preoccupation with him. The date of his death is probably due to latent memory ; it is mentioned in his *Collected Poems*, published in 1902 ; a description of him in her script of March 28th, and divers other particulars, point to this book, which contains his picture ; thus it is impossible to disregard the possibility of her having seen it in passing, without consciously remembering. That she connects him with Professor Sidgwick is, however, a circumstance indicative of an impression received from Mrs. Verrall. But what her script intimates about similar relations to Dr. Verrall and Frederic Myers is imagination ; their acquaintance with Roden Noel was

slight, and the date of his death could not mean very much to them.

As regards the remark referring to the cryptogram on March 14th : " It does not do to be clearer under existing circumstances," it looks as if the automatist played at hide and seek with herself. It must be an easy matter to see what the numbers stood for. As will be seen later, Miss Johnson took the corresponding remark in the *Ave Roma* case to mean that Mrs. Verrall must remain ignorant of the meaning of her own script to prevent her from " telepathing " it to her co-experimenter ; but it is evident that a similar reason cannot in this case be brought forward with regard to Mrs. Holland.

4. Posilipo.

March 21st, 1906, 10.10 *p.m.*

" M [argaret] saw a real place that last time but she has never seen the place itself and did not describe it very clearly."

On the same day at 11 p.m., Mrs. Verrall wrote :

" Posilippo [*sic*] and a terrace there—blue sea beyond the marble balustrade. No I can see no more here."

As far as this cross-correspondence is more than a chance coincidence, it presents the peculiarity that Mrs. Holland's script apparently reflects something which Mrs. Verrall had not yet written. It is conceivable that the latter has before the production of her script had a subconscious impression of the described place, and that it is this impression which has influenced Mrs. Holland.

Mrs. Verrall had never been to Posilipo or Naples. On looking in a guide-book, she found that there were views from an inn and a terrace, but could find no marble balustrade. At any rate, her description is too vague for identification.

5. Fawcett.

The cross-correspondence on the two next Wednesdays, on March 28th and April 4th, is very insignificant. Mrs. Holland's script contained on both occasions allusions to

Henry Fawcett, the blind Postmaster-General, no doubt in consequence of his associations with Salisbury, near which town she was then staying. Commingled with these were, on April 4th, some correct details connected with Mrs. Verrall's relations of the name of Fawcett. The correspondence with Mrs. Verrall's script is confined to the circumstance that the latter had on March 20th obtained in planchette-writing what she took to be allusions to members of that family; Mrs. Holland knew, however, that Fawcett was the name of her mother's cousin. The only possibly supernormal thing is therefore the said details: "F. a blue jewel—set in a ring—or else in a brooch;" that *may* refer to a brooch with a blue stone which Mrs. Verrall's sister Fanny had inherited from a Mrs. Fawcett. The remark was followed by a reference to Mrs. Verrall: "Tell Margaret not to loose another earring."

6. Eheu Fugaces.

April 11th, 1906, 11.30 *p.m.*

"A great black shadow and the sound of a wailing wind—Eheu fugaces."

Half an hour earlier Mrs. Verrall had written:

"Bells and a whip, and snow upon the ground bright sunshine and hard frost—they drive together over frozen roads. I see their backs only, fair hair under the cap. Maloja or near the Maloja. 7 years ago Something fluttered and was gone—and the black bat night has flown——

"That has been repeated—There is an effort to have the same words this time. On bat's wings rides Queen Mab."

The few lines in Mrs. Holland's script may perhaps be said to reproduce the ideas from that of Mrs. Verrall—the black shadow corresponds to the latter part of her script, the famous Horatian words to the description of the flight. That there are two coincidences makes it less possible to ascribe them to chance. Moreover, it is perhaps in this case as in that of *Ave Roma* the thought of Mrs. Verrall that makes Mrs. Holland, who is no Latinist, quote familiar phrases from that language.

But this cannot be ascribed to a supernormal impression, as Mrs. Holland was at that time no longer in ignorance about her co-operator.

. . . . . .

In June, 1906, Mrs. Holland departed for India, but continued by appointment as far as possible to try for automatic script every Wednesday, while Mrs. Verrall on her side did the same. As regards Mrs. Holland, the first two cross-correspondences occurred, however, in script that had been produced on other days of the week. A few times in the period to be dealt with in the sequel, June—October, 1906, Mrs. Holland's script reflects as in the preceding spring something that had beforehand appeared in that of Mrs. Verrall; once it seems due to an impression from Miss Helen Verrall, who also wrote automatically. But at any rate in two cases it was Mrs. Holland's script that came first. Here they will be quoted with her script first in all cases:

7. Janiculum.

June 24th, 1906 (*Sunday*).

"The jagged outline of the Janiculum black against the sunset sky. The final renouncement of the summit of belief —— To you the half and . . . tion of the sentence—the sense to be revealed."

On Wednesday, June 20th, Mrs. Verrall, who was then staying in Switzerland, had written as follows:

"Sun on high summits—mist veils—then reveals the great Eternities. The twin Eternities afar.

"The upstanding white majestic dome
On buttress borne on high
The cloudcapped towers of royal Rome
Against the Italian sky.

"But I have not made her see the point of union between the mountain and St. Peter's rock. Upon this rock Super hanc petram Leave it now."

"The jagged outline of the Janiculum black against the sunset sky" seems a very clear reflex of Mrs. Verrall's "cloudcapped towers of royal Rome against the Italian

sky." That Mrs. Verrall's script is influenced by her surroundings—"partly inspired by the scenery of her surroundings," Miss Johnson admits—can hardly be disputed.

The peculiar allusions in both scripts to the co-operation of the other are connected with a theory of Miss Johnson's which will be mentioned below. There is nothing supernormal in them, and nothing remarkable in their appearance through both automatists, seeing that Miss Johnson had communicated her idea to both before Mrs. Holland's departure for India.

8. Yellow.

August 6th, 1906 (*Monday*).

"y e l o [scribbles]
"yellow ivory."

These words were written towards the end of a long piece of script and marked off from the rest by a space and a change in the handwriting. On Wednesday, August 8th, Mrs. Verrall wrote:

"I have done it to night y yellow is the written word
yellow
yellow
"Say only yellow"

This case differs in several points from all earlier ones. Mrs. Holland's script comes first, but is unconnected with what goes before, and cannot be traced back to her surroundings or train of thought, as was most often the case with that of Mrs. Verrall. Furthermore, the cross-correspondence is this time quite undeniable. One script is not a reflex of the other, but both give exactly the same, though not more than a single word.

Simultaneously with her mother, and sitting in the same room, Miss Helen Verrall wrote:

"Camomile and resin the prescription is old on yellow paper in a box with a sweet scent."

9. Franz Joseph.

September 12th, 1906.

"Franz Joseph—Sept 13th to 25th—a rally on the 21st followed by a complete and unlooked for collapse—Hepatic complications—"

This time it was once more Mrs. Holland's script that came first; but the cause of it was quite evidently the circumstance that she had on the same day read in a paper about the illness of the Emperor Franz Joseph. On September 20th Mrs. Verrall, who had been unable to write on Wednesday, September 19th, wrote with her attention fixed upon Mrs. Holland as follows:

"Now say this Mrs. [Holland] had the warning more than a week ago but may not have understood what was meant —— surely there was a note of the day Sept. 21—or 21st of some month was named.

"But there is another message now for you —— Hildesheim, Klosterli that is not right but it is a German —— name that is wanted . . . Hildesbruder is more like Sept. 21 is a date something has been hindered for this day——"

It can hardly be doubted that this script is due to a supernormal impression of Mrs. Holland's script of September 12th; there are correspondences both with regard to "the warning," the date September 21st, and the German name; "Hildesbruder" is perhaps an attempt at Hapsburger. That Mrs. Holland had the warning "more than a week ago" (*i.e.*, on the preceding Wednesday?) is probably a subconscious guess. It turned out, however, to be nothing supernormal in this warning; September 21st brought neither a rally nor a collapse, nor anything remarkable at all. Mrs. Verrall's impression originated from a fancy of Mrs. Holland's.

10. Monks.

October 8th, 1906 (*Monday*).

"Ask his daughter about the dream—Grey monks of long ago—"

In this case it seems to be from Miss Helen Verrall that

Mrs. Holland had received an impression. The former had on October 6th, away from home, written as follows :

" Remember the word and the date. Carthusians two and two the long black robes and the candles and the images the bright sun and the gaping crowd she will remember——"

It is true that she speaks of black robes, and of Carthusians that are white ; thus the correspondence with Mrs. Holland's grey monks is not very exact. But the words, " Ask his daughter," by whom Mrs. Holland doubtless means Dr. Verrall's daughter, indicate that she subconsciously feels that the impression emanates from Miss Verrall. Of course, Mrs. Holland knew that she was an automatic writer.

On Wednesday, October 10th, Mrs. Verrall, without having seen her daughter's script, wrote :

" See Savonarola all wrapped in black in threes and threes they entered till the place was full——"

This, too, seems a reflex from Miss Verrall's description, the original of which is perhaps a procession with Savonarola, described in *Romola*.

11. Procession.

October 17th, 1906.

" The men with staves head the procession—the lictors—About half way comes the litter—too heavy for the slaves that bear it—Garlands—but not of triumph——

" The noonday sun has dimmed the torches flare."

On Wednesday, October 3rd, Mrs. Verrall had written the following script, evidently owing to the two circumstances that the husband of Mrs. Forbes was buried on the same day at midday, as she knew, and that she was herself much occupied by the arrangement of the procession in the *Eumenidæ*, which was to be played by students in Cambridge :

" The sun shone in the north at midday. [*In Greek :*] Sing songs of good omen, all of you. [*In English :*] The propomps wave their torches——

" Perishing like the grass which to-day is and to-morrow is not."

The Greek burden, as well as the term "propomps," are from the *Eumenidæ*.

It is interesting to see that Mrs. Holland in her script has caught both impressions from Mrs. Verrall: her procession seems a funeral procession. Even the allusion to the time of day has been reflected: "the noonday sun has dimmed the torches flare."

12. Blue Flower.

October 24th, 1906.

"[*Drawing of a flower*] The Blue Flower."

This was written in a line by itself and in a rather peculiar hand. On the same day Mrs. Verrall wrote:

"The blue is to be preferred Blue is her colour——
"Where others see the flowers blue——
"the misty blue veiled flower. Let him that has eyes see."

There is some resemblance between this cross-correspondence and that of *yellow*, and both of them are different from all the rest. One script is not a vague reflex of the other, but they give both clearly the same word or words.

. . . . . .

The above cross-correspondences undoubtedly prove that the faculty of the two automatists to receive impressions from each other had reached a considerable height. There was some difference between them; Mrs. Holland seemed to be the best percipient; at any rate, the correspondences were more often due to her obtaining an impression from Mrs. Verrall than the reverse; but this is only a difference in degree, and not in kind. The *Franz Joseph* case, for instance, proves that Mrs. Verrall possesses the same faculty.

Miss Johnson, however, saw in these correspondences something far more important than a proof of supernormal human faculty. In every single case, to be sure, she saw clearly what might be alleged in favour of the latter conception; in the *Ave Roma* case, for instance, she did

not consider it impossible that Mrs. Holland might have received the idea telepathically from Dr. Verrall, as in other cases from Mrs. Verrall herself. But she rejected this conception because she discerned behind the individual cross-correspondences a common plan which it seemed impossible to ascribe to any of the automatists. She had been much struck by the circumstance that the corresponding scripts did not simply reproduce but, as it were, completed each other. When Mrs. Verrall quoted from *Agamemnon*, Mrs. Holland wrote: "not in the Electra." When one alluded to Pope Leo's meeting with Attila, the other exclaimed: "Ave Roma immortalis." Mrs. Verrall imitates Roden Noel's *Tintagel*, Mrs. Holland produces in a cryptogram the name of the poet. Mrs. Verrall describes a flight, Mrs. Holland ejaculates: "Eheu fugaces!" Miss Johnson thought it possible that she had found the clue to this phenomenon. The occurrence of the same word or the same phrase in both scripts might, she argued, be explained by telepathy from one automatist to the other; but it would be much more difficult to suppose that the perception of one fragment could lead to the production of another fragment which could only "after careful comparison be seen to be related to the first." So the plan of complementary correspondences had been invented; by this method the automatists were prevented from communicating telepathically with each other, and the experimenters from thinking that they did so. But such a plan must needs be an element imported from outside; its existence proved that of the controls.

Against this hypothesis important objections have long ago been raised. Thus Professor A. C. Pigou,[1] pointing among other things to the parallel of Dr. Verrall's Greek experiment, has contended that the apparent complementariness of the cross-correspondences is owing, so to speak, to shots that have not hit the mark. "If we compare

[1] "Psychical Research and Survival after Bodily Death," *Proceedings* S.P.R., Vol. XXIII., pp. 286—303.

the word aimed at to the bull of a target," he says, "it is in a high degree probable that attempts to hit the bull would result in shots scattered widely round it." Thus it had fared with Dr. Verrall's sentence; in spite of the many attempts, the "one-horse dawn" was never attained. Similarly, Miss Miles's thought of *Sphinx* had produced *Luxor in Egypt* instead. "Mildly complementary correspondences are likely to result from attempts at simple correspondences."

Professor Pigou is no doubt right as regards his simile. When Mrs. Verrall, under the influence of her husband, wrote *cock* instead of *dawn*, or when Miss Ramsden obtained the impression of an orange, while Miss Miles thought of a lamp-globe like a fire-ball, the result may be compared to that of a bad shot. But the application of the simile to the cross-correspondences between Mrs. Verrall and Mrs. Holland is not fully justifiable. In Dr. Verrall's experiment there was an outside intelligence at work. The cross-correspondences between his wife and Mrs. Holland could only be compared to that case if one of the automatists had purposely tried to influence the other. Such attempts had been made in 1905, but with no result whatever. In the above quoted experiments both parts were without conscious influence on the production of the script of her co-operator. The comparison with the bad shot halts, because there is no one who shoots.

On the other hand, there is an undeniable resemblance between the faculty of Mrs. Verrall and Mrs. Holland to produce "complementary correspondences," and that displayed by the former during her husband's experiment to perceive things which he had *not* intended to transmit. No doubt his attempt to influence her had created a special receptiveness in her with regard to him, and likewise it is probable that the constant experimenting made Mrs. Verrall and Mrs. Holland specially sensitive towards each other. This, however, only means that they were in rapport, or touch, with each other. But Professor

Pigou's simile may apply to the resulting correspondences as far as there was, of course, a greater chance of catching an impression of *something or other* in the script of the co-operator, or of her doings and surroundings, than there would be of reproducing a particular word, or of mentioning particular things. To obtain through the plan of complementary correspondences that which Miss Johnson had in mind, its execution must in fact hit some bull. The correspondence ought, for instance, to consist in each automatist writing fragments of a sentence which could only be comprehended when brought together. The relation of the two scripts to each other ought not to be so distant that it could only, as Miss Johnson writes, be seen after careful comparison. So vague a correspondence is not complementary, but simply the result of the vagueness of the impression.

A concurrent reason for Miss Johnson, when shaping her theory on cross-correspondences, was, however, the circumstance that the writings themselves seemed, in her opinion, to point to it. From the beginning Mrs. Verrall's script had contained allusions to its own incompleteness and mysteriousness. Sometimes it had referred to Mrs. Forbes as the one who ought to complete it—" fill the gaps " as it was once called—and the products of this lady had in fact contained things that corresponded to those of Mrs. Verrall. In Mrs. Holland's script, too, allusions to the desirability of a co-operator occurred at an early date. At the same time it says that " thought-transference would make another difficulty," and by so saying " recognizes that what is desired is to transcend telepathy between the living." Against this background is, in Miss Johnson's opinion, the series of cross-correspondences between Mrs. Verrall and Mrs. Holland to be seen. But, above all, utterances that indicate a plan are connected with the correspondences themselves. The necessity of secretiveness is alluded to when it is said for instance in the *Ave Roma* case: " How could I make it any clearer without giving her the clue? " And in a great many

cases the cross-correspondence is accompanied by some remark that calls the attention to its being a cross-correspondence—so to speak *signalizes* it as such a one. It is quite impossible, Miss Johnson argues, that the automatists themselves, while writing, could suspect this, and she regards it perhaps as the most decisive reason for assuming the co-operation of an outside intelligence.

On closer inspection, Miss Johnson's chain of argument is, however, hardly strong enough to hold her theory.

The script of Mrs. Verrall, no doubt, especially in the beginning, contained a great many remarks about its own incompleteness; there is much talk about "weaving together," and "superposing one thing on another to make the meaning clear"; one piece of writing does not in itself suffice. But all these utterances refer to Mrs. Verrall herself; it is her own script which is by and by to supply what is wanting. "Oh, if you cannot weave together pertinaciously, write all you know," it says on March 21st, 1901; and on March 28th: "What you have done is always dissociated; improve it by denying folds, weave together, weave together always"; "to one superposing certain things on certain things, everything is clear" (March 31st); "why do you not superpose all in a bundle and perceive the truth" (April 4th). That it is not the co-operation of another person that is meant, is accentuated when it is said on March 8th, 1901: "Some day a later part will come, yours [ulterior veniet pars tua], and the final explanation will commend itself to you." And far later still, on July 11th, 1905, it runs: "A broken thread can you not mend and the scattered fragments place to perfection you ought to unite the parts." The last phrase is in Latin, and the singular number, *debes*, proves that it is Mrs. Verrall alone who is addressed. It is the subconscious sensation of the fragmentariness of the productions that underlies all these exclamations.

In a similar manner, it is the sensation of the mysteriousness of the script that finds vent in the perpetual talk about "clues," or in utterings like the follow-

ing: "Explanation is at hand for you and some one else" (August 16th, 1901); "in mysteries I weave riddles for you and certain others for whom it is right" (September 28th, 1901). These two phrases no doubt allude to Dr. Verrall, and in the latter at least there is nothing supernormal, seeing that he had at this point given his wife cause to believe that he was at the bottom of some of the riddles.

In the meantime, Mrs. Verrall had very soon got a co-operator in Mrs. Forbes. The consequence hereof was for one thing this, that her script was filled with allusions to her, and amongst these were, as just mentioned, several that foretold that her writings would complete Mrs. Verrall's own productions. They were often clear enough, as when it is said: "It is not wholly right; try to understand. Mrs. Forbes has the other words—piece together. Add hers to yours" (October 27th, 1902), or: "You have not understood all—try further. She has had some words incomplete to be added to and pieced and make the clue" (October 31st, 1902). No doubt it was also here the feeling of the script's own incompleteness that found expression. There is nothing that indicates that Mrs. Verrall, consciously or subconsciously, had comprehended the advantages of a complementary correspondence. As a matter of fact, Mrs. Forbes's writings did not in the above cases contain anything whatever of that which the utterances in Mrs. Verrall's script must make her expect. And, as regards the veridical allusions to her doings and surroundings which Mrs. Forbes's writings did contain, we have seen, for instance, through the *Symposium* case, that a supernormal faculty of obtaining impressions is the one possible interpretation of the phenomenon.

The next point of support of Miss Johnson's theory were divers remarks in Mrs. Holland's early script. They referred mostly to the loneliness of the automatist; "one person alone does so little"; "the agent (*i.e.*, Mrs. Holland) is all alone and that makes it hard," and the

like. They are easily explained by the fact that Mrs. Holland, during her sojourn in India, had no one to whom she could or would speak about her interest in psychical subjects. As to the utterance about thought-transference quoted above, it is so evident a result of Mrs. Holland's own reflections, that it cannot claim any consideration at all.

In fact, it is the remarks connected with the cross-correspondences in the scripts of the two automatists in 1906 that have given birth to the theory, and on which Miss Johnson is really resting it. That the cross-correspondence is announced by a kind of signal, accompanying those words of the script that correspond to the other script, might indeed look like a remarkable circumstance. But a closer examination of the signals will reduce their importance very much.

There are, firstly, some cases where "the signal" is so much a part of the cross-correspondence that there would not be any cross-correspondence at all without it. "Not in the Electra" could hardly be connected with a quotation from Æschylus' *Agamemnon*, if Mrs. Holland's script had not added: "M. will know better"; in the *Fawcett* case the slender possibility of "F." representing the sister of Mrs. Verrall rests on the subsequent mention of "Margaret"; nay, the *Posilipo* cross-correspondence *consists* in Mrs. Holland writing: "M. saw a real place." In these cases, then, Mrs. Verrall is, so to speak, a part of the impression obtained by Mrs. Holland. The same must be said of Miss Helen Verrall when Mrs. Holland, on October 8th, 1906, writes: "Ask his daughter about the dream." As to Miss Verrall writing in the same cross-correspondence: "Remember the word and the date," it is evidently the outcome of the tendency to mysticism which is characteristic of the automatists generally; in themselves these words have not the slightest meaning. The same applies, as shown above, to the signal in Mrs. Holland's script accompanying the cryptogram on Roden Noel's name: "It does not do

to be clearer under existing circumstances"; as it is only during the writing that the automatist need be mystified, the remark is quite meaningless. Moreover, Mrs. Verrall's Roden Noel script preceded Mrs. Holland's; thus it was wholly superfluous to prevent the latter from "telepathing" to her.

The *Ave Roma* case has also been spoken of before. As a signal, the exclamation in Mrs. Holland's script: "How could I make it any clearer without giving her the clue?" is decidedly the clearest among them all. But as the cross-correspondence to which it belongs can be shown to have a human source, that reason alone makes it unfit for supporting Miss Johnson's theory.

In the *Franz Joseph* case the signal: "Mrs. Holland had the warning," is part of the impression itself, and the source, as in the preceding one, is demonstrably human.

In the *Procession* case there is no signal. There remain, besides the *Janiculum* case, which will be spoken about below, a few cases that speak directly against the theory of complementary correspondences. On April 11th, 1906, Mrs. Verrall wrote: "There is an effort to have the same words this time." If this is a signal, it must allude to Mrs. Holland's script; but she gave just on this occasion, with the words "Eheu fugaces," what Miss Johnson characterizes as an "apt paraphrase" of the idea expressed by Mrs. Verrall. To signalize a complementary correspondence by announcing that the *same* words would appear in the script of the co-operator would certainly be strange. But, moreover, there are the two cases where the same thing really appeared in both scripts, viz., "yellow" and "blue flower." Here it would seem that the signal was superfluous, as the correspondence is evident; nevertheless Mrs. Verrall writes in one case: "let him that has eyes see," which in the opinion of Miss Johnson must be a very clear announcement of a complementary correspondence; in the other case the script even exclaims, apparently with a special triumph: "I have done it to-night!"

The inspection of the signals thus shows that their value for Miss Johnson's theory is somewhat dubious. Besides, when judging them it must not be overlooked that Mrs. Verrall and Mrs. Holland were themselves very eager to produce cross-correspondences. Under the experimenting in the spring of 1906 their hope was directed to obtaining the same words: "I can't be content till we get the same message," Mrs. Holland wrote on April 12th to Miss Johnson; and in Mrs. Verrall's script of February 19th the same hope had found expression.[1] But after the completion of the said series of experiments, the theory of complementary correspondences was shaped by Miss Johnson, and soon afterwards she mentioned it to both automatists. In the following June it is said in Mrs. Verrall's script: "I have not made her see the point of union," and in that of Mrs. Holland: "To you the half—the sense to be revealed." Is it possible to doubt that this is a result of Miss Johnson's communication? Of course, it could not produce the "complementary correspondences"—the cause of their occurrence has been spoken of before—but that it is responsible at least for this "signal" seems indisputable. And it is surely legitimate from thence to draw the conclusion that most of these allusions had an equally normal origin, namely, the desire of the automatists that their scripts would correspond. The only supernormal element was, now and again, a subconscious sensation in the automatist that the impression she had received was connected with her co-operator. Seeing that they had for a long time been experimenting together, this was hardly as remarkable as had been Mrs. Verrall's subconscious perception that it was her husband who influenced her.

Miss Johnson's argument, then, cannot invalidate the conception which the examination of the cross-correspondences themselves resulted in. The phenomenon is

[1] *Cf.* above, p. 147.

not so mysterious as it appeared to Miss Johnson. She thought it even possible that the objection might be raised against her theory that the plan might be "a subliminal invention of Mrs. Verrall's, since it is on her script that the hypothesis is chiefly based." I doubt that there is any analogy for the assumption of subliminal plans; but all cause for such an assumption vanishes, of course, where it is impossible to discover any plan. One automatist, most often Mrs. Holland, obtained impressions about the other, perhaps less about her script than about the occurrences which, with or without her knowledge, had occasioned the script, just as she caught at the same time or at other times impressions of circumstances in the other's life which had *not* left any trace in her script. This is the simple explanation of the complementary correspondences—a systematized "reading off" of impressions, which only because it took place while the percipient was writing automatically differs from that of Miss Ramsden and other sensitives experimenting in a conscious state.

The inspection of Mrs. Verrall's and Mrs. Holland's performances until the autumn of 1906 has shown that both of them in a marked degree possessed faculties that must be called supernormal. As good as all the categories enumerated above as constituting "the supernormal powers of man," are represented by one or the other of them. At the same time, they illustrate well the truth of an often advanced statement, that no medium is like another. In several respects Mrs. Holland appears to be the most mediumistic; she "sees" more than Mrs. Verrall, she seems more liable to become entranced, and she is indisputably more able to obtain impressions about Mrs. Verrall than *vice-versa*. In return, Mrs. Verrall is foresighted, which at a first glance seems to indicate a very high degree of supernormal faculty, and which Mrs. Holland, judging by the reports, is not. On the other hand, prevision, at least in dreams, is perhaps

just that supernormal power which most often occurs in people who are not otherwise mediumistic.

The great difference between the psychics whom we heard of in the chapters dealing with telepathy and clairvoyance, and those with whom we have become acquainted in the two following sections, Mrs. Verrall, Mrs. Holland, and in a less degree Mrs. Forbes and Miss Verrall, is, however, that the last mentioned are all of them automatic writers. The consequences hereof are great. In that state of unconsciousness with regard to the things produced which characterizes automatism, imagination begins its work; what it is able to perform, all of us know from our dreams, which can be more fanciful than anything we are capable of creating in a waking state, and at the same time, because the control of reason is wanting, are incoherent and nonsensical. What the automatic writing effects is, above all, to fix the subconscious, dream-like ideas to the paper. But the material out of which the writer shapes his fabrications is richer than the conscious contents of the same individual; subconscious memory encompasses a territory that reaches far beyond that of the waking self. On this point, too, the automatic performances must needs differ from those of the conscious sensitives; cryptomnesia of course presupposes unconsciousness.

Thus it is clear that it is not the possession of supernormal faculties that makes the boundary line between automatists and those sensitives who in a conscious state obtain impressions otherwise than by means of their senses. Here, on the contrary, the two groups join each other, while the automatists alone have imagination and latent memory to work with. It is the *state* that makes the boundary. And we have seen the consequences. While the persons who obtain supernormal impressions in a conscious state do not connect them with spirits, even if they write automatically at other times, the conception seems to make its appearance as soon as the percipient is acting automatically. When, for instance, Mrs. Holland

"saw" Mrs. Forbes's dining-room, she wrote down her impression in quite ordinary words, while Mrs. Verrall, when she caught an impression about Carpaccio's Ursula in connection with Mrs. Holland, in her script composed a story about Myers conducting her to that lady's room where it hung on the wall. The notion of deceased communicators seems to be a natural consequence of producing something which the conscious self cannot accept as its own achievement.

But when we acknowledge that a supernormal element in the writings cannot prove the co-operation of the dead, all reason for assuming such a co-operation fails, as regards the scripts we have here examined. The rest was easily explained, and moreover was often so childish that it justified Professor Flournoy's contention that the mediumistic state represents a lower stage than that occupied by the waking person. The intelligence and culture of the automatic writers veiled the fact somewhat in the above cases; Mrs. Verrall's classical erudition and Mrs. Holland's extensive reading, together with their poetical gifts, could, in addition to the miracles worked by cryptomnesia, at times produce a result which at first sight might impose on the reader. But the more conspicuous glare the incongruities—the false profundity, the naive mysticism, the often quite meaningless speech. These things are not consistent with the automatic writers' own stage of development. How then is it possible to assign them to Frederic Myers and his friends?

SECTION IV

The Mediumism of Mrs. Piper
I. The Phinuit Period

CHAPTER XII

PHINUIT

At the point at which we have now arrived with regard to the English automatists, the *Society for Psychical Research* commenced a series of experiments between these and Mrs. Piper, the renowned medium from Boston, who by arrangement with the Society passed her time from November, 1906, till June, 1907, in England. Here, then, is the moment for getting better acquainted with this lady, whose mediumism is very different from the types we have dealt with until now.

As just set forth, the principal disparity between automatic writers and other sensitives is the circumstance that the automatists are unconscious of their productions, though otherwise awake. The next stage, as regards the state of the sensitive, is complete unconsciousness, or trance. The medium who is speaking or writing in a deep trance, is in all other respects, setting aside the speaking or writing, like the profound sleeper; his performances cannot, like those of the waking automatist, take place when he is alone; if he spoke in solitude nobody would know it, and when he is writing, someone must be present to take care of the writing material. Mrs. Piper gradually developed into a writing medium; the proceedings were then as a rule that she sat behind a table furnished with pillows in which her head sank down at the commencement of the trance, her face turned

to the left; on another table to the right of her were pencils and a block of paper; a few minutes after the trance had become complete, her right hand seized a pencil and began to write. The experimenter in charge must take care to tear off the paper and procure new pencils and more paper when the block was used up, exactly as if the medium was a machine to be served. When Mrs. Piper, on awakening, began to speak, it was as if she returned from distant places, and she knew nothing whatever of what she had done in her sleep.

This disparity between the state of Mrs. Piper and that of the waking automatists coincides with a marked difference in the contents of their productions. As we saw, the contents of the automatic scripts mainly originated from three sources: imagination, cryptomnesia, and supernormal perception; to which must of course be added such matter as the writers also remembered in their normal state. Both the latter and subconscious reminiscences played a prominent part in their case. With Mrs. Piper it is quite otherwise. When she is entranced, her normal knowledge scarcely seems to exist. Whether her statements are due to latent memory is more difficult to decide. Contrary to Mrs. Verrall and Mrs. Holland, she is not much of a reader; neither does it seem probable that much knowledge is conveyed to her orally; one of the experimenters[1] expressly mentions "the singularly limited range of her conversation." Cryptomnesia, however, covers a wide territory; hastily read newspaper-stories, casual turning-over of books, scarcely caught fragments of conversations between other people, may all become material for it. It can only be said with safety that the achievements of Mrs. Piper do not generally make the impression of being due to latent memory, but that it may no doubt sometimes be at the bottom of them.

Compared to the automatic scripts, and to the possi-

[1] Dr. Walter Leaf (*Proceedings* S.P.R., Vol. VI., p. 559).

bilities set up by Professor Flournoy and Hartmann, imagination and supernormal perception remain. It is, when we exclude, as we must provisionally, the theory of spirits, mainly on these that the performances of Mrs. Piper must be said to rest. Supernormal perception provides her with the material, imagination gives this material its shape. But even as the material is infinitely richer than that which we found in the automatic scripts, thus the shape is of another and more dramatic kind. This, no doubt, is partly a consequence of the circumstance that the communicators converse with the sitters, and not, as in the case of Mrs. Verrall and Mrs. Holland, with the medium; but still more it is due to the large number of communicators and, above all, to the life-like characterization by which they are distinguished from each other, and in their relations to their present friends, to the experimenter in charge, and to strangers. The reports on the sittings with Mrs. Piper make on the reader the impression of being scenes from a play.

Besides being an eminent medium, Mrs. Piper occupies a unique position as one who has for a long series of years, and under the most satisfactory circumstances, been the subject of scientific study. In the middle of the eighties Professor William James happened to make her acquaintance; she was then twenty odd years old, and her mediumistic faculty had only recently made itself known. By arrangement with Professor James, Dr. Richard Hodgson came to Boston in the spring of 1887 as the emissary of the *Society for Psychical Research* to investigate the matter, and this investigation led to her being tied to the Society by a sort of contract, while he got the entire charge of her sittings on its behalf. In this position he continued until his death in 1905. In the winter of 1889—90, however, Mrs. Piper had been in England, where the leaders of the Society had held numerous seances with her.

A number of reports on the sittings with Mrs. Piper during this long period (1887—1905) are published in the *Proceedings* of the Society, and commented on by promi-

nent researchers. To these must be added a " Report on Mrs. Piper's Hodgson-Control," that is, on seances held after Dr. Hodgson's death, which belongs here as far as it deals with the first half of 1906, the period before her going to England for the second time. Of course, there can be no question here of an exhaustive perusal of this large material. A selection must suffice, and of very limited extent ; I think, however, that it ought to represent the whole number of reports, only in a less degree Dr. Hodgson's record for 1887—91,[1] as most accounts of the sittings from this period are written down some time after their occurrence, and are much abbreviated. The reports from Mrs. Piper's sojourn in England[2] are, on the contrary, written down during the sittings, and with great fullness, some of them even in shorthand. At that time the trance communications were as yet given orally, and thus did not register themselves.

As regards the method of selection, I do not intend to dwell on the so-called evidential statements specially. It is no doubt very valuable to establish that information is produced in the trance which the medium cannot possess normally, and which is not, perhaps, known to any present person ; and many instances will occur hereof. But as said above, this is only one remarkable feature in Mrs. Piper's performances. To give an idea of them *in toto*, it is at least equally necessary now and again to make the extracts so copious that the dramatic play is done justice to, even if it involves the admission of much that is quite unevidential.

In conformity with the practice of the editors, the communicators will be called by the names of the persons who they pretend to be. "This manner of speech," Dr. Hodgson says in one of his reports,[3] " is the most convenient for rendering the facts intelligible ; to attempt to give a full

[1] " A Record of Observations of Certain Phenomena of Trance," 1887—91 (*Proceedings* S.P.R., Vol. VIII., pp. 1—167).
[2] " A Record of Observations of Certain Phenomena of Trance," 1889—90 (*ibidem*, Vol. VI., pp. 436—659).
[3] *Proceedings* S.P.R., Vol. XIII., p. 287.

description in each case of what is ' claimed ' or ' alleged ' or ' purported ' would involve a tedious and useless repetition." Of course, the meaning hereof is not to indicate any conception as to their real nature. For the present, they must be conceived as " trance-personalities," and this, whether they purport to be well-known deceased persons, or are figures whose identity it seems impossible to establish, and who therefore must be specially suspected of being creations of Mrs. Piper's subconscious imagination. In itself, the word, of course, means nothing more than that they are personalities who for us exist only through a medium in trance.

. . . . . .

The first personality of whom we by means of the reports make the acquaintance at Mrs. Piper's sittings, and who completely dominates there during a series of years, is of a very peculiar type. It is an elderly man who calls himself Dr. Phinuit, or more explicitly Dr. Jean Phinuit Scliville, and states that he has been a French physician who had, however, by associating with Englishmen learned their language, and who at any rate through Mrs. Piper only exceptionally uses French expressions. His life-time is said to have been the first half of the nineteenth century. But in spite of his rather detailed statements, the researchers have never been able to identify him, and it seems impossible to attain to a satisfactory hypothesis that accounts for his appearance in Mrs. Piper's trance.

Be that as it may, the image drawn of him through the long series of seances is extremely living and consistent with itself. He is a good-natured and very obliging old man, in fact amiable, but a little coarse ; he swears not a little, and is apt to grow sulky. He seemed to have made it his task to answer the questions of all the people that had sittings with Mrs. Piper, and he went to work exactly as a medium—a psychometrizing or clairvoyant medium like Mr. Vout Peters, for instance, of whom we made the acquaintance in an earlier chapter. That he

was in fact a medium of this type appears from every sitting. The remarkable point is, that Mrs. Piper in her ordinary state did not seem to possess supernormal powers, and that there is among her other trance figures no one who is mediumistic in the manner of Phinuit.

A good idea of Phinuit's psychometric faculty may be got by reading what is said about it by Professor Hyslop,[1] who is himself unable to believe in such a power in human beings. Almost with indignation he mentions the experiments in which Phinuit " would undertake to furnish the names and incidents in the lives of persons intimately connected with some old rag or trinket of whose ownership and history the sitter might be entirely ignorant," even without caring whether the owners were living or dead. If it had at least been confined to the dead! But, Professor Hyslop admits, there were " instances in which Phinuit apparently read the minds of certain persons at a distance, merely by having a trinket of some sort in Mrs. Piper's hand that belonged to the person." This was done in some cases in which the sitter, Dr. Hodgson, had no knowledge of the owner. There was no pretence of spirit communication in the contents of the messages.

Professor Hyslop overcomes the difficulty by supposing Phinuit to be what he himself claims to be, a discarnate spirit, and thinks that this circumstance will " unravel the mystery of his performances." For us, however, there is no reason to doubt that living people may possess such faculties; neither can we accept the contention that they would obtain possession of them as spirits if they had not possessed them before. Phinuit himself held a different opinion; when a sitter, Professor Newbold, asked him: " Does a person who has light [*i.e.*, is mediumistic] in the body, have in the spirit also more light than others?" he answered emphatically: " Yes, indeed."

As regards the remark of Professor Hyslop, that

[1] *Proceedings* S.P.R., Vol. XVI., p. 251 *seq*

Phinuit apparently reads the minds of people by means of the said articles, this neither is Phinuit's own opinion. He is curiously at one with Mr. Vout Peters as to its being not by mind-reading, but through an influence emanating from the objects, that he obtains his knowledge. Again and again he asserts that he is no thought-reader. "If I could read your head, I could tell you. I can't," he says. "I get nothing from your mind; I cannot read your mind any more than I can see through a stone wall," he answers a sitter who questions him. However, he soon learned that the investigators were specially anxious to be told things which they did not know beforehand. "I tell you this because you don't know it, and that is the kind of thing you like," he says. On another occasion he made downright fun of their eagerness to make out whether or not his achievements were due to mind-reading. It was during a sitting in Liverpool; it was planned that Phinuit, if possible, should procure information about the doings of the sitter's mother in London. Sir Oliver Lodge—then Professor Lodge—was the experimenter in charge, and the conversation ran as follows:

"*Sir O.* Tell him about his mother and what she's doing now. It's very important.

"*Ph.* Ha ha! I'll tell you why it's important, because he don't know it himself. I read your thoughts then. I can't generally."

On the other hand, there are many tokens of his being in earnest when speaking of an influence that emanates from the objects. "There is very little influence in that," he said about a lock of hair; another, that was dyed, he called "dead and devilish." Once, when he could say next to nothing about the lock given him, he asked for a "better piece"; when he got another piece of the same hair, cut close to the head, he could tell a great deal. He was very anxious that the influences should not get mingled. Once when a letter was handed him by Sir Oliver Lodge, he reproached him that he had kept it in

the same pocket with the portrait of another person; "you mix things up if you do that," he said. A curious instance of the consequences of such a commingling is the following. Dr. Hodgson had handed Phinuit a letter from another person, but enclosed in an envelope addressed to himself by Mrs. Piper. Phinuit gave a correct general description of the writer of the letter, giving the name William in connection with it. Then he went on to describe a lady—tall, fair, etc. Dr. Hodgson now gave him another envelope addressed by Mrs. Piper, and after handling it he at once exclaimed that this was the influence he had described previously in connection with "the gentleman"; that it had nothing to do with him; that Dr. Hodgson had got them mixed. The description of the lady did suit Mrs. Piper.

At the same time, it is evident that the sitters had a similar significance for Phinuit as a source of knowledge. Just like the objects, they were in possession of an "influence"; it was from this, and not from their thoughts, that he obtained his information. A sitter who asked him: "How do you get what you tell me about myself?" got the reply: "I get it from your astral light." It was, therefore, in their case, as in that of the articles, necessary that they should be kept away from each other. Once he begged Sir Oliver Lodge not to admit two sitters at a time; "can't sort them out properly," he alleged in explanation of his request.

While thus Phinuit, exactly like Mr. Vout Peters, had his decisive opinion about "the mystery of his performances," and declared that it had nothing to do with mind-reading, the experimenters leaned to the opposite view. The solid starting-point presented by experimental thought-transference made them conceive mind-reading a more likely explanation than the mysterious notion "influence." To be sure, there were cases where the connection between a person whose mind might be read by the medium, and the latter, was so improbable,

that the hypothesis was fain to burst. But on the other hand, it might happen that Phinuit gave information which was wrong, but agreed with the sitter's opinion of the matter. For instance, Phinuit once in Boston told an English sitter that a big man with a dark moustache was in his house, and had been put there to watch the place. There had, before the sitter left home, been a question of hiring a policeman to guard his house and live there in his absence, and the sitter thought that the plan had been realized, which, however, was not the case. On another occasion, Phinuit was asked to describe what Professor Sidgwick was doing, and declared that he stood on his head. The Professor had, when the experiment was arranged, said in joke that he would do this. In a similar experiment with Dr. Hodgson, Phinuit said: "He has taken a wreath and put it on his head." Dr. Hodgson had *thought* of putting the wreath on his head, but had confined himself to holding it in his hand.

All this does not, however, go to show more than that the impressions which Phinuit obtains are dim and uncertain, and that the thoughts of the sitter, or of other people who are in contact with him, enter into their composition. There are other cases where Phinuit's statements are correct, while the sitter's thoughts are wrong. Thus a sitter asked, after Phinuit had described the young lady to whom he was engaged, if there was not something peculiar about her hair. Phinuit said no, and it turned out that it had not, as the sitter had been told for fun, been cut short since he saw her last. Furthermore, it was shown through experiments that intentional thought-transference did not succeed with Phinuit. This agrees with all that we have formerly seen. The percipient obtains impressions, among these at times and by chance impressions of the thoughts of other people; but he is not especially susceptible to thoughts, and to force them upon him is difficult, or even impossible. Phinuit's conception of the phenomenon is not far from hitting the mark.

But while contending that "clairvoyance" rather than mind-reading is in this as in other cases the rubric under which supernormal performances, generally speaking, ought to be placed, we must as strongly as ever accentuate the limitations of this faculty. Sir Oliver Lodge says pertinently with regard to Phinuit's statements: "We are evidently not in a region of clear and exact knowledge. Events are dimly perceived, and error is mixed with truth." This is a description which would also fit Mr. Vout Peters's achievements, or Miss Ramsden's characterization of her own perceptions. Phinuit himself declares that he does the best he can, but sometimes "everything seems dark to him," and then he flounders and gropes, and makes mistakes.

The above view is confirmed through some experiments which were made with Phinuit during Mrs. Piper's sojourn in England, expressly with the object of ascertaining whether it was a case of direct clairvoyance, or "only" of mind-reading. Apparently their success was small. Sir Oliver Lodge handed Phinuit a box with letters which were taken at haphazard from several alphabets and had been seen by no one; Phinuit named, very reluctantly, a number of letters, but only two were correct, a result so bad that chance might have done it better. Of a similar type was an experiment which Dr. Walter Leaf made with a closed envelope that contained a slip of paper with the title of a book on it; it was drawn from among two thousand such slips, and nobody knew of its contents. Before Phinuit got the envelope, he called it "that book that you have in your hand," and after it had been given him, he said: "That's only a note; it doesn't amount to anything." Both things may of course be conceived as a perception of the experimenter's knowledge of the matter. This is more doubtful in two other instances where Dr. Leaf knew the contents of the envelopes. In one case the words on the enclosed paper were the following: "Charles I. was beheaded in 1649"; Phinuit said among other

things: "It is written by some one named Charles." In the other case the words were: "Weep no more—for Lycidas is not dead"; Phinuit said: "That's a letter—there is an illness round that." In a third case where the experimenter did not know the contents, which ran: "Iliad. La France," Phinuit said that the envelope contained a lock of *Frank's* hair. It is at least singular that however far he may be from the right, he always says something that has some sort of association with the contents. If it be due to an impression from somebody's mind, it is a highly distorted impression. And if it have nothing to do with minds, but be due to a kind of clairvoyance, it testifies strongly to its vagueness. Being a faculty of clouded, *not* of clear vision, it evidently does not suffice to read the contents of closed envelopes.

It would seem that Phinuit himself had a feeling of the limitation of his powers. Sir Oliver Lodge says that he does not much care for this kind of thing, but says it strains him. After the unsuccessful experiment with the letters of the alphabet he said in an excusatory manner: "You see this is something new to me; I am not accustomed to do these things for people." Of course it is impossible that he in such a case would find any of the "influences" that used to guide him.

With this in mind it will not be difficult to comprehend an accusation that was directed towards Phinuit by many of the sitters, namely, that he acquired a large portion of his apparent knowledge by guessing and "fishing"; by the latter appellation was meant the process that he made the sitters unconsciously furnish him with information which he afterwards tried to pass off as his own knowledge. When it is recognized that his impressions were dim and fragmentary, that he must often feel or grope his way towards them, and that he must in a degree have the sitter's assistance to be able to decide whether they were right, his proceedings, however, look different. No doubt he wanted to get as much credit as

possible for his performances; he desired to satisfy the sitters, but it was also a personal satisfaction to him to show off his faculties. Nay, it is certain that he sometimes supplemented his insufficient knowledge by self-devised statements. But the frequent talk of fishing and guessing is due to a misapprehension of the whole phenomenon. It is, however, as shown above, not shared by Sir Oliver Lodge, who has clearly characterized the nature of Phinuit's perceptions.

There are, moreover, cases enough where Phinuit does just the opposite of fishing or taking the hints of the sitters. Once it is said that he "seemed so obstinately bent upon some erroneous ideas of his own that he would pay no attention to [the sitter's] leading questions." On another occasion he kept to his own opinion in spite of the sitter's denial, and it turned out that it was he who was right. The episode is as follows:

"*Ph.* Who is this uncle of yours named John?
"*S.* I have no uncle named John.
"*Ph.* Yes yes you have—the man that married your aunt.
"*S.* No you are wrong; the man that married my aunt was called Philip.
"*Ph.* Well, I think I know."

After this he, grumbling, changed the subject. But the sitter afterwards discovered that an aunt of his had in fact married a man named John.

And even if Phinuit sometimes invents things, he is not destitute of a certain honesty. Often he downright declares that there is something he cannot tell. "What is his name?" he is asked. "Don't get his name," is the curt answer. Once a lady has asked him who it is she calls "Mr. Man." Then he guesses openly on all the members of her family. "It is not Harry? nor George? nor your uncle? do you call your gentleman [*i.e.*, husband] Mr. Man? Then the gentleman's father? I give it up. Whom do you call Mr. Man?" The lady informs him that it is her dog. Afterwards Phinuit spontaneously reverts to the matter. "I could not tell you who you

call Mr. Man," he says deprecatingly, though he had told her a number of other things.

The following is an instance at the same time of his honesty, and of the difficulties which he has to overcome. Dr. Walter Leaf had had the charge of several seances when one day his brother appeared as sitter. Phinuit said to the latter : " There is a Charles about you. I get the same influence with both of you ; why, you are brothers. Charles must be your father." And addressing himself to Dr. Leaf, he continued : " Walter, I thought that William was your father till I got this other influence, but now I see that Charles is your father and William is your grandfather, your father's father." All this was absolutely correct, and Phinuit, who evidently felt sure of what he now said, had not been obliged to confess his former mistake.

As may be seen, Phinuit could also give the names of people. And it is evident that he partly obtained them in the same manner as so many other things, namely, as an impression, now vague, and now more distinct. Here also he has therefore been accused of guessing and fishing. For instance, it was pointed out that it was generally the most common Christian names, as John, William, etc., that he produced. This, though, ought hardly to be wondered at, especially as it is admitted that they were most often the right ones. And in the numerous cases where the name was not common, it was only natural that he could not feel sure of his impression being correct, or could not at all get hold of the right name. But the approximations might be obvious enough. " Gibbens was announced first as Niblin, then as Giblin," Professor James relates ; " a child Herman had his name spelt out as Herrin." At a sitting with Mrs. Verrall, Phinuit asked : " Ellums, Vellums, what is that ? That's you. Mrs. Vennalls, Vernils Verils Veril." Even a mistake as " Susan Mary " for *Selma* seems due to a perception of the real name.

The names did not always come to him as sounds. At

a seance he said that the sitter would get into intercourse with a man whose name was "something like Atwood." "The name is nearly right," he continued, "an A-t and then two O's and a W. I see this myself. There are no special spirits. I see it back of you just as plainly as if it was before your eyes." Here, then, Phinuit had a *vision* of the name. Exactly in the same manner, the perceptions of Miss Ramsden were now auditory, and now visual.

The remark of Phinuit on this occasion, "I see this my own self. There are no special spirits," alludes to another way in which he gained his knowledge. And, whatever may otherwise be thought of it, one must for the sake of clearness make a keen distinction between it and his clairvoyant power.

In his report on his sittings with Mrs. Piper in Liverpool in 1889—90, Sir Oliver Lodge strongly accentuates the above-mentioned difference. "While Phinuit," he writes, "frequently speaks in his own person, relating things which he himself discovers by what I suppose we must call ostensible clairvoyance, sometimes he represents himself as in communication with one's relatives and friends who have departed this life. The messages and communications from these persons are usually given through Phinuit as a reporter. And he reports sometimes in the third person, sometimes in the first."

Thus we meet in Phinuit the same doubleness which we found in the medium, Mr. Vout Peters. On one hand his own performances, on the other spirits that he sees and tells about or brings messages from. Occasionally Phinuit seems to give up his place altogether to these spirits; but then we have exceeded his own territory. It is not, however, always easy to decide whether they speak directly, or it is Phinuit who speaks for them in the first person. It is seldom that the change of personality is announced with such plainness as in the following case, where Phinuit tells the sitter: "Here's

Newell, and he wants to talk with you. So I'll go about my business whilst you are talking with him, and will come back again later," and then addressing himself to the spirit, says in his drastic manner: "Here, Newell, you come by the hands while I go out by the feet."

As regards his relation to the spirits, Phinuit alleged that he saw objectively the persons he spoke of. Often he described their appearance; once more one is reminded of Mr. Vout Peters and his accurate descriptions of his spirit-visions in contrast to the more vague characterizations of the non-present owners of the "articles." Also the relation between the spirits and the objects presents a parallel. At the seances in Finland many spirits came to their friends and relatives among the sitters; but only in a few cases it was the owners of the objects who came. Quite in accordance with this, Phinuit seems to believe that the sitters have more power to attract the spirits than the objects have; for instance, he says to Sir Oliver Lodge, who doubted that the owner of a certain chain would appear as he was a stranger to himself: "Oh well, he may recognize it. Your own friends come to you. A strange spirit is rather difficult, but they sometimes come to their things."

A rather strange thing ought to be mentioned here, namely, that Phinuit sees at times among the spirits that surround him also persons that are not dead. But even this has its parallel with other clairvoyants; thus Miss Miles relates that she when psychometrizing sees herself surrounded both by living and dead people. Phinuit, for instance, says to a sitter: "Now I am trying to get your brothers and sisters nearer," and it turns out that some among these, as he knows very well, are alive. In another case he says about the sitter's, Mrs. H.'s, mother: "[She is] here with me, right beside me. [She is] in the body, but I get her spirit influence, so I can tell you about her." In itself it is of course not remarkable that a clairvoyant

can see the double of a living person. A curious instance is the following. Dr. Hodgson handed Phinuit an envelope addressed by Mrs. Piper, and asked among other things whether the writer was in the body or in spirit. "In the body," Phinuit replied, but went on: "Why no—that's curious. There she is in the spirit talking to an old lady." Whatever may else be thought of this, it is correct from the dramatical point of view that the entranced medium speaks in this way about her own spirit.

On the other hand, Phinuit did not seem able to procure information through speaking with the living. To a question concerning a living lady he replied: "How can she tell me, when she is in the body?" About such he must, as seen in the case of Mrs. H.'s mother, procure his knowledge clairvoyantly by means of their influence, just as he gained knowledge by means of objects.

Is, now, this division of Phinuit's performances into clairvoyantly obtained information and communications from spirits founded on any kind of reality, or rather, is the dramatic effect of the division supported by any difference between the two kinds?

If there is any sense in distinguishing between Phinuit's own achievements and those things which are said to originate from spirits, present or near at hand, that produce information which they must be supposed to have acquired in a normal manner, there must be an essential difference between the two categories. The knowledge of the departed may, of course, be deficient; they may have forgotten much, they may in the unaccustomed situation find it difficult to keep their thoughts together, and so on. But what they know will both positively and negatively differ from the clairvoyant knowledge of Phinuit. They will not falter and grope; their statements will not be founded on vague and inaccurate impressions; and they will not produce information about any one but themselves and people they know, will

in other words not speak about things which they could be acquainted with only in a supernormal manner. Of course it is conceivable that they may have learned things from Phinuit or other spirits, and that on the other hand Phinuit's memory may fail him—for instance, when he reports what he, presumably, has been told by spirits before the sitting.[1] But this knowledge and these deficiencies it will be easy to distinguish from the information due to supernormal perception.

This thorough and important difference exists in fact between the two kinds of statements in Mrs. Piper's trance. "Nothing *à la mode* Phinuit at all," Dr. Hodgson justly says about a case from 1889, referring to the conspicuous change that took place when a spirit was announced. Sir Oliver Lodge experienced the same change at his very first seance with Mrs. Piper, and describes it in these words: "Next follows the most striking and impressive element of the whole sitting; without which, indeed, it would have been vague and unsatisfactory—too much apparent guessing and too little precisely accurate; but now the manner became more earnest and energetic and continuous." Dr. Leaf writes in his report that the series of sittings held by Sir Oliver was remarkable, as compared with those reported by himself, for a high level of success. Now a perusal of the detailed record of the seances by Dr. Leaf will soon show that it is quite exceptional that spirits appear there. It is in fact due to their co-operation that Sir Oliver's sittings look so much more successful than the other ones. If only those portions, where Phinuit is alone, be regarded, the disparity between the two series will scarcely be perceptible.

The following extracts aim at giving a notion about the whole phenomenon; no special stress will be laid upon the

[1] *Cf. Proceedings* S.P.R., Vol. VIII., p. 92: "The best way to get a good sitting, Phinuit said, was to have him talk with departed friends and then see him again."

so-called evidential things beyond stating that they belong to that category.

The spirit that manifested at Sir Oliver Lodge's first sitting was his aunt Anne, his mother's sister, who had had the charge of him after the death of the former. She appeared in all at six sittings. Phinuit gave the following correct description of her exterior: "Hair on top of head very plain, put back, tied up at back—not frizzled, plain. Very neat in her dress, firm expression about the mouth." At the first seance her own words were:

"My boy, I am with you. I am Aunt Anne. I tried to help you. I had little means, poor surroundings; but I did all I could. I would have done more if I could."

At her third manifestation she said:

"Isn't it curious that I can talk to you now? You know I told you that if ever I found it possible to communicate with you I would."

Sir Oliver adds that his aunt is the only person who ever said this to him. The next time she said about a ring which he had put on his hand just before the sitting:

"And Olly dear, that's one of the last things I ever gave you. It was one of the last things I said to you when I gave it you for Mary [*i.e.*, Lady Lodge]. I said 'For her, through you.'"

Sir Oliver writes: "This is precisely accurate. The ring was her most valuable trinket, and it was given in the way here stated not long before her death."

With another relative Sir Oliver specially wanted to enter into communication, because he himself had hardly known him and therefore thought it possible that things might be told about him which could not be due to reading of his own mind. That a medium might supernormally obtain information by means of objects was at that time less heeded than the danger of telepathy. Sir Oliver's father had had a great many brothers, among whom was

Jerry (Jeremiah), who had died more than twenty years before the sittings. Three were still living ; one of these, Robert, was the twin-brother of Jerry and lived in London. From him Sir Oliver on asking received a watch that had belonged to Jerry. In the course of the next sitting he handed this watch to Phinuit, who in his usual groping manner produced a quantity of information where false was mingled with true, mostly about Jerry's family relations. Afterwards, however, he said : " I will bring him right up close to me " ; soon after he was said to be there. But Phinuit went on talking about different things, until Sir Oliver asked whether his uncle was still there, and Phinuit advanced the following explanation :

" One difficulty that I have is to make your uncle conscious of this, and the other is getting the spirit to speak to you —— Rather difficult for me to talk to him, do you see ? Because he passed out when you were young and you do not know so much about him[1] and at the same time he does not seem to take an interest in you."

When Sir Oliver replied, " No, but he does in Uncle Robert," and told that the latter had sent him the watch, he succeeded, however, in making Jerry speak.

" *J.* Very good. Say God bless Robert and I should like to see him. You are my nephew aren't you ?
" *Sir O.* Yes.
" *J.* I know you, seems to me I do. Yes. I used to know you, but you were a little shaver then ; a very deep thinker. Used to think a great deal ; more than the rest of the boys. What about Alfred and all those fellows ? "

Alfred was one of Sir Oliver's many brothers. As regards the term " a little shaver," Mr. Robert Lodge writes that it " fits Jerry's method of expression to a T."

At a seance in the evening of the same day Phinuit said to Sir Oliver, whom he had given the nickname of " Captain " :

" Hulloa, Captain, I have been talking to your friends.

[1] This would seem a very naive remark by Phinuit ; it has evidently escaped his attention that it might be interpreted as if he used to obtain his information from Sir Oliver himself, by mind-reading.

Had a long talk with Uncle Jerry. He remembers you now, as a boy with Aunt Anne, but you were kind of small. He knew you, but he did not know me very well; wondered what the devil I wanted trying to talk to him and how I got here."

"This is exactly how he would remember me," is Sir Oliver's comment on the remark about Aunt Anne.

Meanwhile, Sir Oliver had already in his first conversation with Uncle Jerry asked him if he could recall something about his youth. He had at once said yes, he remembered that he "pretty nigh got drowned," trying to "swim the creek." He quite caught the idea, Sir Oliver writes, namely, that the point was to produce something which the nephew ignored, and at the following sittings he related a number of experiences, trivial in themselves, but well suited to identify him. Already the day after his first appearance Phinuit said:

"Jerry says, Do you know Bob's got a long skin—a skin like a snake's skin—upstairs, that Jerry got for him? It's one of the funniest things you ever saw. Ask him to show it you."

Mr. Robert Lodge replied to Sir Oliver's inquiry: "Yes, a crinkly, thin skin, a curious thing; I had it in a box, I remember it well. Oh, as distinct as possible. Haven't seen it for years, but it was in a box, with his name cut in it."

Sir Oliver lays much stress on this and other particulars which he did not know himself. Jerry's twin-brother, Robert, did not remember many of them, but some, as for instance the dangerous swimming of the creek, were affirmed by a third brother, Frank. A story about the killing of a cat in "Smith's field" was reduced to the cat being killed in another place, but it was verified that there had been a field of the above name at Barking, the scene of the youthful exploits of the brothers. Several things from this distant past it was impossible to elucidate; but just the circumstance, that the trance-utterances referred to matters so remote and so insignificant that it proved next to impossible to verify them, gave

them, when they turned out to be correct, an increased significance as regards the theory of telepathy which Sir Oliver wished to eliminate. At the same time, these reminiscences about trifles which were in themselves trivial, are no doubt characteristic of what an old man might light upon when thinking of his childhood. The objection that they are not very peculiar may be answered in the same way as that respecting the names given by Phinuit; the chances are that the common things are the right ones.

A communicator who holds a place somewhat apart was Edmund Gurney, who had died the year before the sittings. He was one of the very few who seemed to use the organism of Mrs. Piper instead of the intermediation of Phinuit. When the latter had once said about a spirit: "She can't come and speak herself," and Sir Oliver objected: "Mr. Gurney does," Phinuit exclaimed with some indignation: "You are greedy. Yes, Mr. Gurney does, but Mr. Gurney is a scientific man, who has gone into these things. He comes and turns me out sometimes. It would be a very narrow place into which Mr. Gurney couldn't get."

Edmund Gurney appeared for the first time at a sitting where Sir Oliver had handed in a letter from him. This circumstance, of course, detracts very much from the evidentialness of the case. In return, it is rather dramatic. Sir Oliver writes: "The personality seemed to change—the speaker called me 'Lodge' in his natural manner (a name which Phinuit himself never once used), and we had a long conversation, mainly non-evidential, but with a reference to some private matters which were said to be referred to as proof of identity, and which are well adapted to the purpose. They were absolutely unknown to me, but have been verified through a common friend."

Here, as is often the case in the reports on Mrs. Piper's sittings, the most personal and, perhaps, most convincing

things are left out. But some little scenes are dramatic. Gurney appears, but has scarcely commenced speaking, when he discovers that Sir Oliver is not alone. The dialogue is as follows :

"*G.* Don't give up a good thing, Lodge . . . who is here ?
"*Sir O.* This is my wife.
"*G.* How do you do, Mrs. Lodge ? I remember having tea with you once.
"*Sir O.* [introducing] Mr. and Mrs. Thompson.
"*G.* Yes, I remember you, I think. Good-bye, Lodge ; don't divulge my secrets."

On another occasion, Sir Oliver, after a long conversation, which his sister had attended, said to Gurney :

"*Sir O.* The Thompsons are waiting in the next room. Shall I call them in ?
"*G.* The Thompsons ? Oh I know. I met them at your house once at dinner, I think.
"*Sir O.* Yes.
"*G.* No, I don't especially want to see them. Well, Lodge, I must be going. Good-bye——"

Afterwards the medium seemed to sleep for a few minutes, until Phinuit, who had been absent during the preceding conversation, which had partly concerned himself, returned and began in the following manner :

"Eh ! what ! Oh, yes. All right. Look here, Mr. Gurney has been here. He told me to express his regret that he had not said Good-bye to Miss Lodge."

The remarks of Gurney agreed with the actual circumstances ; he had had tea with Lady Lodge, and he had once met the Thompsons at her house. But no less remarkable is the *mise-en-scène.* Sir Oliver calls attention to his characteristic demeanour—the natural unwillingness of the man of sensitive temperament to be thrown with strangers needlessly, and his friendliness towards Miss Lodge. It is also dramatically correct that a few minutes elapse before the return of Phinuit ; they are necessary to permit him to talk with Gurney "behind the scenes."

One of the subjects of Sir Oliver's conversations with Gurney was, as intimated, the personality of Phinuit. Although the statements about him are, of course, non-evidential, and may be pure fabrication on the part of the medium, they present at least the interest that they agree with the impression which the sittings themselves produce of his activity, especially with regard to other spirits.

In his first conversation with Sir Oliver, Gurney had already spoken of the doctor. "Very few," he said, "you will get like Dr. Phinuit. He is not all one could wish, but he is all right." At their next meeting, he described him at great length in reply to a question from Sir Oliver, saying:

"Dr. Phinuit is a peculiar type of man. He goes about continually, and is thrown in with everybody. He is eccentric and quaint, but good-hearted. I wouldn't do the things he does for anything. He lowers himself sometimes—it's a great pity. He has very curious ideas about things and people; he receives a great deal about people from themselves (?) And he gets expressions and phrases that one doesn't care for, vulgar phrases he picks up by meeting uncanny people through the medium. These things tickle him, and he goes about repeating them. He has to interview a great number of people, and has no easy berth of it. A high type of man couldn't do the work he does. But he is a good-hearted old fellow. Good-bye, Lodge. Here's the Doctor coming."

At a later seance Sir Oliver asked whether Phinuit was reliable. Gurney replied:

"Not perfectly. He is not a bit infallible. He mixes things terribly sometimes. He does his best. He's a good old man; but he does get confused, and when he can't hear he fills it up himself. He does invent things occasionally, he certainly does. He's a shrewd doctor. He knows his business thoroughly. He can see into people——"

Sir Oliver asked: "Can he see ahead at all? Can anybody?" Gurney answered:

"I can't. I haven't got into that. I think Phinuit can a little sometimes. He has studied these things a good deal. He can do many things that I can't do. He can look up

people's friends and say what they are doing sometimes in an extraordinary way. But he is far from being infallible."

It is worth noting that Gurney did not seem to have an eye for Phinuit's mediumism. He believes that he is fore-sighted, and that he has "studied these things a good deal," but else he only refers to the information Phinuit gets from spirits, and his extraordinary faculty to look up people's (living) friends and say what they are doing. Sir Oliver's report contains an interesting instance of the latter, namely, the above-mentioned experiment of making Phinuit say in Liverpool what the sitter's mother was doing in London. For the rest, it tallies with the facts that Gurney, who died in 1888, did not understand psychometry; the non-spiritistic interpretation of mediumistic performances had until then been telepathy; it appeared in an earlier instance, that of Mrs. Stella's Italian psychic, that it was just Edmund Gurney who could not accept any other explanation.

How much or how little influence, with regard to the appearance of spirits, ought to be ascribed to the "articles," they at any rate do not seem an indispensable condition. At a seance where Mr. and Mrs. Thompson, Sir Oliver Lodge's friends and neighbours in Liverpool, were present for the first time, besides Sir Oliver himself and his brother Alfred, Phinuit said: "Do you know Richard, Rich, Mr. Rich?" Mrs. Thompson replied: "Not well, I knew a Dr. Rich." "That's him," said Phinuit. "He's passed out. He sends kindest regards to his father." A Dr. Rich had some time previously died suddenly; he was the son of the head of the Liverpool post office. Sir Oliver Lodge had never seen him, but Mr. Thompson had, it seems, once or twice spoken to him. His Christian name was not Richard; but this was hardly the opinion of Phinuit; Richard is doubtless a result of his seeking for *Rich*.

Some six weeks later, towards the end of a sitting with the same Thompsons, Phinuit said suddenly: "Here's

Dr. Rich," after which the latter himself commenced speaking.

"*Dr. R.* It is very kind of this gentleman [*i.e.*, Phinuit] to let me speak to you. Mr. Thompson, I want to give you a message to father.

"*Mr. T.* I will give it.

"*Dr. R.* Thank you a thousand times, it is very good of you. You see I passed out rather suddenly. Father was very much troubled about it, and he is troubled yet. He hasn't got over it. Tell him I am alive—that I send my love to him."

Some little facts were mentioned of an identifying character, and admitted afterwards to be accurate. The father, though inclined to be sceptical, confessed that he had indeed been more than ordinarily troubled by the sudden death of his son, because of a recent estrangement between them which would otherwise no doubt have been removed.

From among the sittings reported by Sir Oliver Lodge may finally be chosen one which the sitter, a chaplain of Liverpool, Mr. Lund, describes in anything but appreciatory words. "Altogether," he writes, "there was such a mixture of the true and false, the absurd and rational, the vulgar commonplace of the crafty fortune-teller with startling reality, that I have no theory to offer —— What impressed me most was the way in which she [Mrs. Piper] seemed to feel for information, rarely telling me anything of importance right off the reel, but carefully fishing, and then following up a lead." This is an unsympathetic, but on the surface not incorrect, description of Phinuit's method. There was, however, one thing that impressed Mr. Lund. In the midst of his promiscuous talk of the sitter's family and their troubles, of an upset carriage (wrong), and a burned carpet (right), Phinuit asked: "Do you know Thomas?" "I am Thomas," replied Mr. Lund.[1] And now came the words:

"He'll know me—Thomas—Lon—Lund—Tom Lund. That's your sister that's saying it."

[1] Mrs. Piper did not know the sitter's name. Strangers were always introduced anonymously.

Afterwards Phinuit told that the brother had been absent when she died, and described her appearance. Her name he tried in vain to grasp, and went through a long list; it had "ag" in the middle, he said. At last he succeeded.

"But it's your sister—Maggie—that's it—she says you are brother Tom—no, her name's 'Margie.' Too bad you were not at home—it was one of the sorrows that followed Tom all his life. He'll never forget it."

Mr. Lund's sister Maggie had died of diphtheria in his absence quite thirty years before this, and her death was a heart-aching sorrow of many years. *Margie* had been her pet name, which he had quite forgotten.

Thus it is here also, in the case of a specially unsuccessful seance, seen that the statements connected with the manifestation of a spirit were of another and more impressive kind than Phinuit's own performances.

Of the sittings reported by Dr. Leaf it has already been said that they were, on the whole, less satisfactory than the Lodge series, and that spirits very seldom appeared in them. An exception in both respects makes a seance with a Mr. Clarke and his wife, "perhaps the most remarkable of the series," Dr. Leaf writes. During this sitting Phinuit mentioned as present two spirits, both relatives of Mrs. Clarke, who was a German by birth. The names indicated in the report by initials were given correctly.

"*Ph.* I want to talk to you about your uncle C. There is someone with him—E. He is your cousin. Well, he sends his love to you.

"*Mrs. C.* How did he die?

"*Ph.* There was something the matter with his heart, and with his head. He says it was an accident. He wants me to tell you that it was an accident. He wants you to tell his sisters. There's M. and E.; they are sisters of E. And there is their mother —— He begs you, for God's sake, to tell them that it was an accident—that it was his head; that he was hurt there [makes motion of stabbing heart]; that he had

inherited it from his father. His father was off his head; you know what I mean—crazy. But the others are all right, and will be."

Mrs. Clarke calls this " a most striking account " of her uncle's family in Germany. The father was disturbed in his mind for the last three years of his life in consequence of a fall from his horse. The son committed suicide in a fit of melancholia, by stabbing his heart as described. It is true that Phinuit spoke as if the son had inherited the insanity from his father; nor did he seem to understand the double cause of his death—both head and heart. But as he is represented as reporting what E. says, without personal knowledge of the matter, his want of comprehension rather enhances the dramatic effect. Later he continued the conversation with Mrs. Clarke in the following manner:

" *Ph.* Here's M. — She is your aunt — she is here, and wants to speak to you.

" *Mrs. C.* What does she say about her husband?

" *Ph.* She says he has changed his life since. She does not like it that he married again.

" *Mrs. C.* Does she like the one whom he has married?

" *Ph.* Oh, she loves her dearly. But she does not like him to have married so soon. He married her sister. Two brothers married two sisters. Her husband has children now ——"

This was an accurate description of the family of another uncle of Mrs. Clarke's. His wife died childless, and he soon after married her sister, by whom he had children. His brother had previously married a third sister. It is true that the sitter knew all these things, and the facts connected with her cousin E.'s death came to her mind as soon as Phinuit mentioned his name. But that the assurance and fluency with which the German names and peculiar circumstances are reported here, where spirits are referred to as the source, differ essentially from the vagueness that characterizes the clairvoyant impressions, is at any rate indisputable.

CHAPTER XIII

GEORGE PELHAM

On March 22nd, 1892, Mr. John Hart (pseudonym) had a sitting with Mrs. Piper in Boston, which was as usual conducted by Dr. Hodgson.[1] Mr. Hart had brought some objects that had belonged to deceased relatives of his, and Phinuit tried in his ordinary manner to disentangle their relations. There were two Georges among them. Suddenly Phinuit said to the sitter: "There is another George, who wants to speak to you. How many Georges are there about you any way?"

This was the commencement, so to speak, of a new era in the history of the Piper-trance. Mr. Hart had, a month previously, through an accident in New York, lost his friend George, in the reports called George Pelham, or more commonly G. P. Mr. Pelham was at his death thirty-two years old; he was a lawyer by training, but had devoted himself chiefly to literature and philosophy. He was an Associate of the Society for Psychical Research, and, four years before his death, had had a single sitting with Mrs. Piper, one of a series arranged by the Committee on Mediumistic Phenomena connected with the Society. But neither the medium nor the Rev. Minot J. Savage, who was on that occasion present officially on behalf of the Committee, had learned his name. A couple of years afterwards he had had a discussion with Dr. Hodgson on the possibility of a future life, and on this occasion vowed that if he died before him and found himself still existing, he would "make things lively" in the effort to reveal the fact of his con-

[1] "A Further Record of Observations of Certain Phenomena of Trance," *Proceedings* S.P.R., Vol. XIII., pp. 284—582.

tinued existence. The seance on March 22nd, 1892, was the first at which any friend of his was present. His relations with Dr. Hodgson had not been of an emotional nature.

With Phinuit acting as intermediary, George Pelham in the first sitting already gave a number of correct statements, among other things his own name and the names, both Christian and surname, of several of his intimate friends. Among these were Mr. James Howard, his wife Mary, and their daughter Katharine. Referring to the latter, G. P. said: "Tell her, she'll know. 'I'll solve the problems, Katharine.'" Mr. Hart was aware that Pelham had known the Howards, but did not understand what this remark referred to. Mr. Howard, however, to whom Mr. Hart gave an account of the sitting, was very much impressed by the words. George Pelham, when he had last stayed with them, had talked frequently with Katharine, a girl of fifteen years of age, about the great problems of existence, adding that sometime he would solve them, and let her know.

This first manifestation was followed by a great many others, nay it may be said that G. P. never entirely disappeared from Mrs. Piper's trance. It is unnecessary to repeat here much from the numerous sittings where he tried to prove his identity, and in fact convinced most people of it. The interest he presents reaches beyond the question of identity. Besides, in this as in other cases, the references that are said to be the most convincing are omitted in the report as too personal for publication. But an idea about the strength of his claim to be believed one gets on hearing that, out of at least one hundred and fifty sitters whom in the following six years he "met" at Mrs. Piper's, he recognized thirty whom Pelham had known living, and never claimed acquaintance with a sitter to whom Pelham was unknown. One of the recognized persons, the Rev. Minot J. Savage, did not himself know that he had ever met the deceased author; as mentioned above, the latter was not introduced under

his real name when he, in March, 1888, attended a sitting together with Mr. Savage. Once only a sitter appeared at Mrs. Piper's who was not identified by G. P., though Pelham had known her ; it was a young girl who had been a child when he died five years previously. Phinuit could tell a great deal about her ; but this was not the way in which G. P. knew people. When he was told her name, however, he remembered her well.

There is, on the whole, in this remarkable case, where for the first time the same personality manifested beside Phinuit through a long period, abundant opportunity to observe the difference between an " ordinary " spirit and the medium Phinuit. What a contrast there is between George's correct use of the Christian and surname of his friends, or of the surname only where this would have been natural to Pelham when living, and Phinuit's groping for names and his tendency to let the Christian name suffice. Or between Phinuit's errors when speaking of all these things which he had not himself experienced, or heard of, but only got an impression of then and there, and George's mistakes, which are most often slips of the memory, and easily accounted for. How natural is, for instance, his misrecollection when he says : " Lent a book to Meredith. Tell him to keep it for me," while the rights of the case were that Pelham had during a visit from his friend Meredith, some months before his death, wanted him to take away some of his books, but that he had not done so. And how different is it from the manner of Phinuit when G. P., after recognizing a picture of the Howards' summer-house in D., which they had left eight years before Pelham's death, said : " But I have forgotten the name of the town," adding afterwards : " Then you bought a place at some ville " ; they had, in fact, bought a place at Xville in 1886.

In spite of the great mass of verifiable statements—of which many were unknown to the actual sitters—presented in the G. P. case, it is, therefore, not these that have given it its greatest import. The dramatic realism

which from the very first stamped the manifestations of this personality, the consistence of character maintained through all the following years, did much more to convince his friends and relatives who had originally all been sceptical, not to speak of Dr. Hodgson himself. His attitude towards the varying sitters, varying in accordance with Pelham's relations with them when living, his clear understanding of what was expected from him, his intelligence and his willingness to sacrifice himself to the cause he had espoused, this and much more made of G. P. a figure worthy of representing the once living Pelham in an altered situation. What change has been discernible in this continuous living and persistent personality, says Dr. Hodgson, is a change " not of any process of disintegration, but rather of integration and evolution."

. . . . . .

George Pelham's utterances in the first seance had referred to his friends and his own affairs, which on account of the suddenness of his death had been left in a certain disorder. Though the most personal references are not quoted, the reader gets a clear picture of the whole situation. Above all he wished to speak with Mr. Howard. " Tell Jim I want to see him," he said to Mr. Hart. Three weeks passed before his wish could be gratified, as the interval was occupied by sitters for whom appointment had been made previously ; but at each of these sittings Phinuit represented G. P. as anxious to see him or other friends, saying : " George says, when are you going to bring Jim ? " or " George says he wants to tell you of the philosophy of this life." At the Howards' first seance, on April 11th, he talked in a pertinent manner of his sudden decease, and what happened afterwards, as one who speaks to friends after a separation. Besides, he besought them to bring his father. His mother was not living.

But at this meeting the sitters had already, by request of Dr. Hodgson, begun to put test questions to G. P. These questions, which from the point of view of identifi-

cation it was thought specially valuable to get answered, but which referred to subjects he did not spontaneously allude to, strained and worried him in no small degree. Dr. Hodgson himself thought afterwards that the method of proceeding had often been objectionable; the communicator was interrupted instead of allowed to say what he wanted, and confusion was created by a continual change of subject. For instance, he was one day while other things were discussed asked about a sitter's name; it was Professor Peirce, who had been known to Pelham. The question was not answered, but when Mrs. Piper was just coming out of trance, she whispered among some incomprehensible words twice the name Peirce, and on the next day G. P. said that he had "tried to tell the medium just as she was coming into her body again." Here then it became clear that he had not postponed the reply because he did not know the name. But, of course, the experimenters must be on their guard to avoid deceiving themselves. The following case illustrates well the difficulty of the situation for both parts. At a sitting in May, G. P. acted as amanuensis for the sitter's deceased sister. The Christian name of this lady had been given, and G. P. went on to write some more statements at her dictation. Dr. Hodgson interrupted him by a demand for her surname, to which G. P. answered with some impatience:

"Don't bother me while her sister [*i.e.*, the spirit] is speaking to me please, for I have quite enough to do without this."

Dr. Hodgson writes hereof: "This, thought I, is an evasion; it would have been much easier to have written the name, if it were known, than to spend so many words in telling me not to interrupt." His suspicion seemed to receive confirmation when the writing ended without any reply to his question. But afterwards Phinuit, who came to speak a few words about other matters, stopping suddenly, spelled out the letters of the name,

MANNORS (pseudonym), adding that George was "yelling at" him to say that!

In a single case, however, a similar suspicion seemed well founded. G. P. was asked about the names of two ladies who had formed a society together with Pelham two years before his death, and said that he would put off answering until he was alone with Dr. Hodgson, who did not know the names, in order that the answer might not be considered thought-transference. But the names which he gave later were not correct; thus the alleged reason for not answering at once had probably been a pretext to get delay. In view of the severity with which he was treated, we ought perhaps to forgive him that he tried to conceal his ignorance—what the researchers, however, have not been willing to do.

G. P. once says about himself and the other spirits: "Like as when in the body sometimes, we can't always recall everything in a moment." But the experimenters seem to have been prone to suppose that he possessed a similar memory as that which is ascribed to the subconscious mind. As an instance may be quoted that a sitter more than two years after Pelham's death asked G. P. a series of questions concerning the number of pages of a manuscript of Pelham's on a philosophical subject, the paper on which it was written, its division into chapters, its external title page, and its first sentence and dedication. It is characterized as a failure that G. P. was unable to answer these questions.

But also in another respect strange achievements were exacted from George Pelham. Dr. Hodgson counts as failures divers unsuccessful attempts on his part to answer questions about lost objects, and a few prophecies. He adds about the former category, that correct answers would have strengthened the evidence for the possession of supernormal faculty, but that the failures do not directly affect the question of identity. The same applies in his opinion to G. P.'s prophecies, "which were not many and were chiefly personal," and

where Dr. Hodgson thinks his "success would outweigh his failure." The remarkable thing is, that Dr. Hodgson apparently would have found it natural, if supernormal faculty had been the privilege of all departed. He does not seem to have realized how different Phinuit is in this respect from the other communicators in Mrs. Piper's trance. As regards George Pelham, there is not much reason to believe that he had mediumistic powers. But, of course, it is not excluded that he may have been something of a psychic, though in a far less degree than Phinuit. On the other hand, it is conceivable that Phinuit has helped him with this kind of task. The exact circumstances cannot be learned from the report, where the cases in question are not recorded.

Of a wholly different type is a series of attempts to make G. P. give information about the doings of some of his friends or relatives; this, of course, does not imply any supernormal powers in a spirit. G. P. himself displayed a great interest in these experiments after they had been suggested to him, and here he was several times very successful. On April 13th, 1892, it was arranged that he should watch his father, who lived in Washington, and see him do something which the sitters (the Howards) could not know about, and tell them at their next seance. This came off on April 22nd, and G. P. said:

"I saw father and he took my photograph and took it to the artist's to have it copied . . . I went to Washington; my father will be hard to convince; my mother [*i.e.*, stepmother] not so hard."

Asked about this, Mrs. Pelham wrote from Washington: "His father did, without my knowledge, take a photograph of him to a photographer here to copy—not enlarge. The negative had been broken. Mrs. L. was going to have it copied in New York, and Mr. Pelham thought he would see what they could do here."

With the parents themselves it was at a sitting in New York on Saturday, May 14th, arranged that George should follow them in the afternoon of the same day,

during which they should do something special having relation to him. At a seance on the following Monday, where they would not be present, he should then describe what he had seen. On this occasion he said as follows :

" I saw him take some notepaper and write an explanatory letter to Frank about what I had said to him in or on that day [*i.e.*, Saturday] . . . The flowers which I saw mother put before my photo, she and father will understand . . In connection with this I saw them open my book and place therein a picture of X. Y. That is all of importance that I saw them do."

All these details were correct, only Mr. Pelham had not written the explanatory letter to Frank, the brother of George. He had intended writing such a letter on the said afternoon, and had consulted his wife about the proposed contents, but had not found time to do it. It is conceivable that George had heard their conversation, and so thought that the plan had been executed. There are several instances where he claims to have heard something which had really been spoken ; thus, Professor Newbold [1] relates that G. P. once told him that he had heard him and Dr. Hodgson speak about " the memoriam Rogers," *i.e.*, Mr. Rogers's preface to Pelham's poems ; " I caught it as you were telling him and it attracted me," G. P. had said. They had in fact conversed with each other on this subject.

Another successful experiment of this kind referred to Mr. Howard. Phinuit had in the beginning of a seance, in December, 1892, said that George had gone to find Jim and would come back and tell Hodgson what he was doing. Afterwards G. P. himself appeared and wrote through the medium's hand, while Phinuit simultaneously spoke with another person, as follows :

" Hello, I am with you now and, Hodgson, Jim has seen Fenton —— Jim is reading, or was a short few minutes ago."

Both these statements were correct. Mr. Howard had gone into the country to visit a friend named Fenton.

[1] *Proceedings* S.P.R., Vol. XIV., p. 48.

Later in the sitting G. P. said in reply to a question from Mrs. Howard, this time using the voice :

" *G. P.* He has gone to see his friend Fenton, saw him not three quarters of an hour ago, as near as I can go by the time.
" *Dr. H.* It was more.
" *G. P.* That I can't specify."

Mrs. Howard asked what Fenton and Jim talked about, and G. P. gave what proved to be a correct answer :

" About this very subject and about me. They have been discussing it, but Fenton is as hard-headed as Orenberg [a friend of Pelham's] —— "

Further must be mentioned an experiment, the result of which was very curious. In the commencement of a seance, on April 28th, 1892, Dr. Hodgson asked G. P. to visit the Howards and return to inform him what they were doing. Towards the end of the sitting, Phinuit interrupted his talk with the sitter, Professor Peirce,[1] to give a number of statements about things which G. P. had seen Mrs. Howard do. He spoke as follows :

" She is writing, and [has] taken some violets and put them in a book. And it looks as if she's writing to my mother . . . Who's Tyson . . . Davis . . . I saw her sitting in the chair —— sitting before a little desk or table. Took little book, opened it, wrote letter he thinks to his mother. Saw her take a little bag and put some things in it belonging to him, placed the photograph beside her on the desk. That's hers. Sent a letter to T A S O N T Y S O N. Mrs. —— She hunted a little while for her picture, sketching. He's certain that the letter is to his mother. She took one of George's books and turned it over and said : ' George, are you here ? Do you see that ? ' These were the very words. Then she turned and went up a short flight of stairs. Took some thing from a drawer, came back again, sat down to the desk, and then finished the letter."

It turned out that Mrs. Howard had done none of these things that day, but all of them on the evening of

[1] It was at this sitting that G. P. would not give his name at once ; see above, p. 203.

the 26th and the afternoon of the 27th April. On both days she had written to Mrs. Pelham. On the 26th she had had George's photograph before her while she wrote, and had afterwards put it in an envelope with the letter and another photo of him. It was also correct that she had hunted a little for her picture, namely, one she had painted of George. All that was said about her taking George's book, etc., was true, but she could not tell at what time she did that. While writing to his mother she went and took some things from a drawer, and came back again and finished the letter. On the 27th, in the afternoon, she wrote to Mrs. Tyson, a lady she had not written to for weeks, perhaps for months, declining an invitation. Later she wrote to Mrs. Pelham, and seeing " George's violets " by her in an envelope gave them to her daughter to put in a drawer. They were not put into a book.

As may be seen, Phinuit's representation, though precise in most details, interweaves two series of doings in a perplexing manner, beginning by the latest. Concerning this Dr. Hodgson writes that G. P. seemed to have a very obscure perception generally of our physical world, and to have mistaken for contemporary physical events a series of recent scenes in Mrs. Howard's subconscious mind. But the latter explanation does not agree with George Pelham's other achievements. In no other instance has he proved himself able to see, by a sort of retrospective clairvoyance, or by mind-reading, something that has actually occurred, but at an earlier time. Either he sees the events contemporaneously with their taking place, though with varying clearness, or he cannot see them at all. It is conceivable that he had seen those events when they occurred, and reproduced his recollections of them, perhaps without a clear understanding as to the time of their occurrence. They might have " attracted " him, as he states that the conversation between Dr. Hodgson and Professor Newbold about the preface to his book did, because they concerned himself, while Mrs. Howard, perhaps, at the time of the sitting on

April 28th, did not perform anything that could do this. Likewise, all that he reported about his father's doings had been things that had some relation to himself; on the first occasion he had seen his father take his photograph to the photographer, in the second case he had observed a series of doings which were purposely performed by the parents as related to him. The same connection between the events which a communicator appears to have seen, and their relation to the deceased person whom he purports to be, is found in other cases, and was regarded by Dr. Hodgson as one of the circumstances that testified to the identity of the spirits. That Phinuit can see things which do not concern himself is, of course, another matter.

It might also, perhaps, be conceived that it was Phinuit who clairvoyantly saw Mrs. Howard's past doings, and reported them to help G. P., but it is hardly so probable an interpretation as the other one. But in any case, it is evidently Phinuit who is responsible for the form in which they are presented; it is thoroughly *Phinuit-ese* to say: "Who's Tyson?" and to call an envelope "a little bag." It is as if he got the description from G. P. through impressions, and not by means of words.

Dr. Hodgson's report contains several more contributions to the elucidation of the manner in which G. P. saw things. At a sitting on December 22nd, 1892, the following conversation took place between them on account of an experiment performed by the latter:

"*G. P.* I followed you on a railway train for some distance, and then I thought you were in New York [correct], but am not sure . . . I could not be too positive, as things look differently to me now from what they did when I was in my material body.

"*Dr. H.* I suppose that you don't see the physical universe directly, but come into relation with our perception of the physical universe?

"*G. P.* Yes, absolutely in a spiritual sense; in fact it is, and must necessarily be, through the spiritual that I see you, and can follow, and tell about what you are doing from time to time."

What G. P. says here is not, perhaps, very clear. But he seems to take no notice whatever of Dr. Hodgson's speech about *our perception of* the universe. His explanation has nothing to do with seeing by means of other people's minds; in this respect he seems to agree with Phinuit, who always denied being a mind-reader. And at a sitting on January 24th, 1893, his words were clearer. The dialogue on this occasion is the following:

"*Dr. H.* Well, George, I want to go away very shortly while you are still here, and I want you to either go yourself or to get Phinuit to go, and if possible tell them here where I am going and what I am doing.

"*G. P.* Yes, I will try my best, but it will depend wholly on my seeing your spiritual body, so please send out your spiritual body to me as much as you possibly can while you are doing the trick."

Nothing of what G. P. on this occasion reported about Dr. Hodgson's doings was correct; thus it must be supposed that the latter has not understood the art of "sending out his spiritual body." An experiment with an acquaintance of Pelham's, Miss M., failed likewise; Dr. Hodgson himself connected these two failures with the circumstance that neither his own nor Miss M.'s relations to Pelham had been of an emotional nature such as those of his parents and the Howards. G. P.'s words, perhaps, expressed a similar thing; if he could only see people in the moments when they sent out their "spiritual body" to him, *i.e.*, were filled with thoughts of him, his nearest friends and relatives must of course be those he most often saw.

Perhaps this too is the explanation of the following case from a sitting with Mr. Howard on December 9th, 1892:

"*G. P.* I saw you in Marte's library a few days since.
"*Mr. H.* All three of us?
"*G. P.* No, simply you, Jim."

Mr. Howard had been in Mr. Marte's library on December 1st, but all the time with the latter; besides, Dr. Hodgson had been there part of the time. Has G. P.

been able to see his friend, but not his more remote acquaintance, Mr. Marte ?

A few experiments aimed at making G. P. read letters, of course to the exclusion of Mrs. Piper seeing the contents. On December 7th, 1892, a letter from Mrs. Pelham to Mrs. Howard, who was present, was put into the hand of the medium. After handling it G. P. said :

" *G. P.* Oh I see father is not well——Where is it that she says in that letter she is going ?

" *Mrs. H.* First to New York——and then perhaps to come here, George, to see you. Now what is the place that they are going to dispose of, what does it say in the letter, George ? Tell me the name.

" *G. P.* The house and property in New York ——"

All this was correct and written in the letter. But the name of the place in New York, a very peculiar one, G. P. was unable to give, though it was also written in the letter, and though he had given it correctly in the spring.

If G. P. could see the contents of the letter, it seems then to be in a similar imperfect manner as that in which he on the whole saw the physical universe. At the next experiment, a fortnight later, he evidently saw nothing at all. Mrs. Howard had intended to bring a letter from his father discussing " George's reappearance at the sittings." By mistake, and without knowing it, she had instead of this letter brought a business letter from Mr. Pelham, which she handed to Mrs. Piper. The following conversation ensued :

" *Mrs. H.* I want you to see your father's letter, because there is something in it that will please you.

" *G. P.* This does not sound as father would talk when I was in the body . . He believes that I exist [calls for Dr. Hodgson, complains of being ' muddled ']. He was pained but he is no longer pained, because he feels that I exist.

" *Mrs. H.* That's right ; I have read it.

" *G. P.* That brings me nearer to my father ; now —— tell him that I am very near him——and I see him and hear him when he is talking of me, hear him discussing with mother certain things about my life, some things that perhaps pained him, and some things that perhaps pleased him——"

G. P. did not here say more than what he knew previously, and what Mrs. Howard's remark, that the letter would please him, might lead up to. Possibly the letter, which was at any rate coming from the father, had given him an impression of the latter's mood ; he says of it that it " brings him nearer to his father." In that case the performance must be classed with psychometry. That he got no suspicion of the real contents of the letter agrees with the hypothesis that the non-emotional was inaccessible to him.

. . . . . .

With the greatest possible eagerness, and with a touching gratitude towards Dr. Hodgson, G. P. had undertaken all these tasks. " Words can never express what I feel towards you for trying to get me to do things, to explain to you where I am, and all for your all," he said to Dr. Hodgson in the spring of 1892. But, as said above, the method of the experimenters was not always rational. G. P. must often beg them to pay more regard to himself, and he could sometimes feel a little annoyed with them. " You all want me to work for you, but you don't care a straw about helping me," he exclaimed at a seance in December, 1892, when two sitters overwhelmed him with questions without giving him time to answer. " It is hard work, Hodgson, but I have got courage to brave it out," he said a few days afterwards to Dr. Hodgson. Seven years later he still remembered this period with a certain bitterness. " I know how you confused me, by Jove, and I don't want any more of it," he said to Dr. Hodgson in the summer of 1899 at a sitting where he acted as the helper of other spirits.[1]

What was really amiss, however, was no doubt the circumstance that George Pelham, in spite of all their demands for " tests," did not understand that it could be seriously doubted who he was. This appears clearly at two sittings in December, 1892, of which the former

[1] See below, p. 248.

contains, so to speak, a making-up with Dr. Hodgson, and the latter the same with Pelham's dearest friend, Mr. Howard. The conversation between Dr. Hodgson and G. P. took place in the presence of Mrs. Howard on December 19th, and ran as follows :

"*G. P.* I want Hodgson to speak his mind fully to me personally now.

"*Dr. H.* Well, I have not got anything specially on my mind now, George.

"*G. P.* Have I said anything to trouble you ? Be frank, please.

"*Dr. H.* No, you have not said anything to trouble me, except the things that make it difficult to reconcile to your identity. You said things that easily contradict, George ——

"*G. P.* I think you will find my statements contradictory only when you confuse me by all talking at once, or when I do not fully understand your questions.

"*Dr. H.* Well, George, I am going to go over all the things that appear to be contradictory, and ask you about them ——

"*G. P.* That is what I want. It has worried me far more than it has you, my dear fellow.

"*Dr. H.* Well, I suppose it must have, George. I can understand that.

"*G. P.* Now just let me illustrate. When I began to speak about my existence here and was ready to quote it philosophically, you interrupted me continually.

"*Dr. H.* Well, we are very sorry, George ; we would like you to go straight on without our saying a word for an hour, if you could.

"*G. P.* Don't you know you did it ? Please be frank.

"*Dr. H.* No, I am not aware that we did, George, except you seemed as though you needed us to speak to you occasionally.

"*G. P.* Have you not got the things written ?

"*Dr. H.* Yes.

"*Mrs. H.* [to Dr. H.]. Yes, I think he was interrupted a good deal by Marte at the last sitting.

"*G. P.* Well, please read them carefully . . . and see if I am not right.

"*Dr. H.* Well, we will take care, I think, George, not to do an injustice.

"*G. P.* Thank you."

Dr. Hodgson, on examining the records, arrived at the conclusion that the statements made by G. P. were fully

justified, though he had not thought so at the time of their conversation.

The scene between G. P. and Mr. Howard took place three days later; Dr. Hodgson was present, and had, as will be seen from his very first remark, learned something from the sitting on the 19th:

"*G. P.* Now, what will I do for you?

"*Dr. H.* Well, George, is there anything that you would like to give us, any special message that you thought it would be desirable for us to have, or anything about philosophy, we should be glad to have that!

"*Mr. H.* Well, George, before you go to philosophy—you know my opinion of philosophy—

"*G. P.* It is rather crude, to be sure.

"*Mr. H.* Tell me something, you must be able to recall certain things that you and I know; now, it makes no difference what the thing is; tell me something that you and I alone know. I ask you because several things I have asked you, you have failed to get hold of.

"*G. P.* Why did you not ask me this before?

"*Mr. H.* Because I did not have occasion to.

"*G. P.* What do you mean, Jim?

"*Mr. H.* I mean, tell me something that you and I alone know, something in our past that you and I alone know.

"*G. P.* Do you doubt me, dear old fellow?

"*Mr. H.* I simply want something—you have failed to answer certain questions that I have asked—now I want you to give me the equivalent of the answers to those questions in your own terms.

"*G. P.* What were they?

"*Mr. H.* The questions were about where we dined, and that you did not remember; now tell me something you do remember.

"*G. P.* Oh, you mean *now*."

Mr. Howard had in the beginning of the seance asked G. P. where they on a certain occasion had dined together in New York; G. P. had given the names of two common friends, but not that of the friend with whom they had dined. It is evident that it is only at this point of the conversation that it dawns upon him that this is the failure to which "Jim" is referring; until then he had believed that he spoke of former sittings. Mr. Howard continues:

"*Mr. H.* Tell me something now that you remember that happened before.

"*G. P.* Well, I will. About Arthur [one of the friends mentioned] ought to be a test. How absurd . . . what does Jim mean? Do you mean our conversation on different things, or do you mean something else?

"*Mr. H.* —— I mean that we spent a great many summers and winters together, and talked on a great many things and had a great many views in common, went through a great many experiences together——

"*G. P.* You used to talk to me about . . . "

What G. P. afterwards said has not been published. "Several statements were read by me," Dr. Hodgson writes, "and assented to by Mr. Howard, and then was written 'private,' and the hand gently pushed me away. I retired to the other side of the room, and Mr. Howard took my place close to the hand where he could read the writing. He did not, of course, read it aloud, and it was too private for my perusal. The circumstances narrated, Mr. Howard informed me, contained precisely the kind of test for which he had asked."

For the readers who are not made acquainted with the test, the dramatic character of the incident must suffice. There is something pathetic in G. P.'s dawning comprehension of his friend's doubt about his identity—and something tragi-comic in his surprise when he begins to realize that the difficulty is that he cannot remember where they dined together some time in New York! And it is touching that he after he has given all the desired tests reverts to this forgetfulness, and says deprecatingly:

"Jim, I am dull in this sphere about some things, but you will forgive me, won't you? . . . but like as when in the body sometimes we can't always recall everything in a moment, can we, Jim, dear old fellow?"

. . . . . .

There has in the preceding pages almost exclusively been talked about George Pelham's communications on his own behalf, and about his attempts to prove his own identity. He was, however, going to play a greater part

than this merely personal one. He became in the following years Phinuit's co-operator and, partly, his successor as the one who assisted other spirits in communicating. With the clairvoyant part of Phinuit's activity he had nothing to do ; but as a helper of others he displayed an ability which soon threw Phinuit into the shade.

About the time of George Pelham's first manifestation a development had taken place in the trance-phenomena which was in itself of great importance, and, moreover, enhanced the value of G. P.'s assistance. Hitherto the communications had been oral, both when Phinuit spoke on his own account or in the name of some other spirit, and when occasionally another spirit was himself " controlling " the medium. This happened also in the case of G. P. ; in the beginning Phinuit was intermediary, *i.e.*, the medium spoke with the voice which characterized Phinuit, either in the first person representing G. P. or in the third person about him ; but gradually G. P. himself learned to use the voice. Phinuit, however, had been wont to write down now and again something by the hand of the medium ; this was also done at the first sittings where G. P. manifested. A short time previously it had occurred that some other spirit made use of the hand simultaneously with Phinuit speaking through the mouth of Mrs. Piper. Dr. Hodgson experienced this phenomenon for the first time on March 12th, 1892, ten days before the manifestation of G. P. ; a private sitter had been a witness to it already in 1891.

By degrees this led to Phinuit using the voice and the other communicators the hand. An instance of its taking place simultaneously has been mentioned above. But even apart from this double utilization of the medium, it was no doubt the increased use of writing that made it possible for G. P. to co-operate in a satisfactory way with Phinuit. The latter continued as a rule to be the intermediary when the voice was employed, while G. P. acted as amanuensis by the use of the hand. Already at some sittings in May and June, 1892, he rendered assistance by

writing for other communicators ; a case has been quoted above. From the autumn of 1893 until a new change occurred in 1896, he assisted almost constantly in the Piper-trance, either by writing for other communicators or by advising those who tried to communicate directly themselves.

Also in other respects, namely, the exchanging of the trance-speech for trance-writing had proved an improvement. Not only it secured without intervention of stenographer or note-taker an exact rendering of the communications, but it appeared to be a means of communication of which the spirits could more easily make use than of the voice. It would seem, however, that until instructed in some way they were unaware that they were *writing.* The hand was like a machine which registered automatically their speech—if it were speech ; several expressions intimate that the communicators were only thinking. On the other hand, it was of course far more difficult for the experimenters to hold a conversation with the hand than with the voice, and this might occasion some confusion. At the same time, the communicators suffered from the slow manner of proceeding, and from the constant interruptions when the writing was difficult to decipher. A helper on their side like George Pelham was almost indispensable.

Meanwhile, Phinuit went on in his old way, especially when alone, mingling false statements with true, and often incurring the old accusations of fishing and guessing. Upon much of what had formerly been conceived in this manner, George Pelham's intervention had, however, thrown a new light. When spirits were present, he seemed far better able to manage matters than Phinuit had been. It is a curious thing that Phinuit seemed to be far less self-confident after G. P.'s appearance on the stage. He seemed better able to understand the importance of the cause, and to see his own deficiencies ; he might be quite downcast when G. P. was absent. Such was, for instance, the case at a sitting on January 30th,

1893, where, besides Dr. Hodgson, the Howards and a stranger were present. Phinuit spoke a little of the stranger's character, and said there was a young man and an older one who wished to communicate with him. The latter tried to write a few words, but they were almost illegible, and Phinuit said he would go and try to get George to help him. There were further vain attempts at writing, accompanied by much violent movement in the hand. At last Phinuit exclaimed :

" *Ph.* What is the matter ? I don't know what they are doing with me, any way.
" *Dr. H.* Seems to be a regular stream of them now.
" *Ph.* I can't help it ; they say these things, and they will say them, Hodgson. I can't help it."

The scene ended by Mrs. Howard asking for George, who then made his appearance.

The usefulness of the writing and its advantages over his own proceedings were also humbly acknowledged by Phinuit. Thus, in a dilemma at a sitting in April, 1893, he said :

" It is hard for me to understand. If you can get him [the communicator] to use the hand, you can get the messages more direct. They often get confused, coming through me."

On the whole, it became under the new circumstances easier to distinguish between the different causes that might lead to confusion. It became evident that it was in a degree due to the communicators themselves. Dr. Hodgson lays much stress on the fact that the success of a sitting seemed to depend on the communicating spirit, and not on the sitter. If the performances varied with the sitters, it would, he argued, tell in favour of the explanation telepathy ; that, on the contrary, the individual communicator displays the same clearness, or want of clearness, in the presence of all sitters, seemed to his mind an important argument against the said explanation. And such is what his experience had told him. There were, he says, mainly three causes that might occasion confusion in the communicators : the difficulty,

or impossibility, of using the organism of Mrs. Piper, the contact with earthly conditions, and circumstances concerning their death. But all this was more or less individual, *i.e.*, characteristic of the individual spirit. Some persons would begin to understand "the machine" at once, others never attained to the direct use of it. The contact with the human sphere—"your sphere," G. P. calls it—was a more general cause of a certain confusion; even habitual communicators often allude to their feeling muddled or weak during the sitting. Finally, there was the confusion due to quite special conditions in the individual communicator. Dr. Hodgson mentions, among others, a case where a gentleman who committed suicide in a moment of temporary aberration, due to a trouble from which he had suffered for a year before his death, tried in vain to communicate coherently, though the information he gave sufficed to indicate who he was; in the course of some years, however, this confusion cleared away and the sittings with him became excellent. In the case of a friend of Dr. Hodgson's, who also took his own life, there was much confusion when he first came into communication, which was a year after his death, but later on he gave information, unknown to the sitters, of a private and personal kind, well suited as a proof of identity. Dr. Hodgson asserts that there are a number of such cases, and concludes as follows: "In all these cases the confusion persisted through varying conditions of Mrs. Piper's trance, and while clear communications were received from other persons; and yet, so far as the sitters' minds were concerned, there seemed no assignable reason why the communications were not clear originally, or did not soon become clear, if dependent upon living persons." A similar relation he finds between the confusion and a too short distance from the moment of death; but this kind of derangement, presumably due to the shock of death, disappeared as a rule in the course of a short time.

Dr. Hodgson's observation on this point is of some

interest even apart from its importance as an argument against the explanation *mind-reading*—which cannot, at any rate, be an argument against that of clairvoyance. If it be not based on such reality as Dr. Hodgson believed, there seems to be one alternative only—that the dramatic sense of the entranced Mrs. Piper is so eminent that she, when it serves the characterization, does not even hesitate to make the communicators confused and ignorant, concealing the knowledge which it is otherwise the most important object of the sittings to display.

. . . . . .

The last report from the Phinuit period is due to Professor William Newbold, and embraces sittings from the years 1894—96.[1] Professor Newbold is an acute critic, and is of opinion that a large portion of the phenomena may be explained as a " weaving together by Mrs. Piper's nervous mechanism of all the complex suggestions of the seance room, supplemented by telepathic and clairvoyant impressions got in connection with the sitter and with the articles which he brings." But he does not think that they, taken as a whole, can be so explained. It is evidently Phinuit's performances that he has in mind above ; the description does not fit all the phenomena. It does not, above all, fit the cases where a distinct personality comes forward with proofs of his identity and in a manner that must seem characteristic just of his or her individuality.

Such a communicator whose manifestation made a strong impression on Professor Newbold, was for instance his " Aunt Sallie," his mother's sister who had died when he was not ten years old, and had been dead twenty years. She showed her knowledge of his rather peculiar family relations by alluding to a lady who was at the same time his aunt and his grandmother. This was quite correct ; a sister of his mother and of Sallie had been the wife of his paternal grandfather after the death of his grand-

[1] " A Further Record of Observations of Certain Phenomena of Trance," *Proceedings* S.P.R., Vol. XIV., pp. 6—78.

mother. A curious trait was, that the communicator wanted that he should himself explain the relation so that she might feel sure of his being really her nephew—entirely the reverse of the usual process. "Evidence of this sort," Professor Newbold concludes, "suggests the actual presence of the alleged communicators." Nor was he able to reconcile to a telepathic theory the circumstance that just this half-forgotten aunt, whom he had not thought of during the sittings, would manifest, while he vainly desired to get into communication with a very near friend who had died a few years previously, nay even applied to George Pelham about this without result.

Professor Newbold's report further deals with the transition to a group of new controls that definitely supplanted Phinuit. They appeared in the end of 1896, and after January, 1897, no more is heard about the mysterious doctor who had been a thorn in the side of many people, also among those who believed in the genuineness of the other spirits. To conceive him as a sub-personality of Mrs. Piper's was prevented, for one thing, by the other communicators, so to speak, vouching for his independent existence. This applies, as has been seen, for instance, to Edmund Gurney; and it applies to George Pelham, who from the first mentions him with much respect and a ceremonious use of his surname, "Dr. Scliville." Thus it seems necessary to accept or reject them together; either they are all of them fancy creations—sub-personalities if that name be preferred—or they are all of them real, and the difference is only that Phinuit has not been able to prove his identity. That he was a medium is hardly sufficient to establish his being Mrs. Piper's second self.

Though they are of course quite unevidential, I shall finish by quoting some utterances about Phinuit which occurred in the Piper-trance ten years later. Sir Oliver Lodge, who had always felt more friendly towards Phinuit than the other experimenters, one day during Mrs. Piper's

sojourn in England in 1906 directed a question concerning him to his successor "Rector." The conversation was the following :

"*Sir O.* Does 'Phinuit' mean anything to you ?

"*R.* You mean Dr. Phinuit ? Oh yes, we see him occasionally ; he is in another sphere of this life, no longer earth-bound, very well and very happy.

"*Sir O.* He was a friend of mine.

"*R.* Could you by any possibility be the friend whom he called 'Captain' ?

"*Sir O.* Yes indeed—

"*R.* Would you like to see and speak with him ?

"*Sir O.* If it did him no harm—

"*R.* Oh no harm in the least ; he is beyond harm, friend. He has so progressed —— "

Such was the not undramatic end of Phinuit's history. Sir Oliver desisted from "seeing" him, as he feared it might injure the medium whose trance had been of a less agreeable kind in the time of Phinuit than it had afterwards become.

SECTION V

The Mediumism of Mrs. Piper
II. The New Régime

CHAPTER XIV

THE HYSLOP SITTINGS

The old doctor's disappearance in one respect did not improve the situation; he was succeeded by some at least equally mystic personalities. George Pelham was evidently incapable of undertaking the management alone; it looks almost as if it was necessary to employ more extraordinary spirits for that task. The introduction of "the band," as the new managers are often called, was, however, apparently due to chance. Besides, it took place under circumstances which in the beginning threw a somewhat singular light on its members.

At a sitting in 1895, Professor Newbold had by the help of George Pelham got hold of Stainton Moses, the well-known English medium, who had died in 1892. In a manuscript left with Frederic Myers, and which nobody else had been allowed to see, Stainton Moses had given what purported to be the real names of his controls, or guides, who were in his automatic writings called *Imperator*, *Rector*, *Doctor*, etc. The alleged Moses was now at divers sittings with Professor Newbold and Dr. Hodgson questioned about these names, and replied, though reluctantly and with difficulty, to their questions; but the names turned out not to be identical with those found in the manuscript. In other respects, however, the communicator had, in the opinion of Professor Newbold, "an air of verisimilitude"; Dr. Hodgson states that he later

" did furnish some private information unknown to the sitters, and afterwards identified in England." Besides, George Pelham vouches for him; the same argument applies to him as to Phinuit and the new controls—they must stand or fall together.

On the other hand, it appears that George Pelham had no great regard for the performances of the alleged Moses when alive. " He had light," G. P. said, " but deceived himself; he was not far progressed." Stainton Moses himself admitted at a Piper-sitting that much of his teachings were his own theories; " as I thought this very strongly, I felt sure of having been told this," he said. In reality, his productions can hardly bear a critical examination, and the names left by him may like other things be fabricated by his automatic self. The names that were given by the Piper-Moses were those of ordinary people, and seem due to a confusion which characterized his first manifestations.

There remains, however, the fact that the Imperator-band emerged at Mrs. Piper's in consequence of Dr. Hodgson having, in 1896, pointed out to George Pelham the importance of making Stainton Moses " clear," and getting the answers to his questions. " The final result," Dr. Hodgson writes, " was that Moses professed to get the assistance of his former ' controls,' who after communicating on various occasions directly in November and December, 1896, and January, 1897, demanded that the control of Mrs. Piper's ' light ' should be placed in their hands." That they were not really the controls of Stainton Moses seems, however, quite certain; they were wholly ignorant about the automatist himself and what they were supposed to have written through him; this was not the case with the Piper-Moses himself, and cannot, therefore, be ascribed to the ignorance of the medium. As regards their real identity, the more secondary members of the band seem to have given varying and quite impossible names, while Rector and Imperator did not even try to satisfy the curiosity of the experimenters. In the

opinion of the researchers, they did not seriously claim to be identical with the controls of Stainton Moses whose names they had adopted.

Be that as it may, the consequences of the innovation were at any rate beneficial. Imperator claimed that the indiscriminate experimenting with Mrs. Piper's organism should stop, and promised that he and his assistants would repair it as far as possible. Dr. Hodgson then for the first time explained to the normal Mrs. Piper about Stainton Moses and his alleged relation to Imperator, and got her sanction to the change. This led to ever happier results; the new managers were able to keep foreign "influences" away; Mrs. Piper's trance became more agreeable for herself, and former sitters were all struck by the improvement in the clearness and coherence of the communications.

. . . . . .

The first fruits of the new reign are, as regards the published records, to be found in Professor James Hyslop's report on three series of sittings which he, or Dr. Hodgson on his behalf, had with Mrs. Piper in 1898—99.[1] They are described with a greater completeness than any earlier. All remarks by the sitter himself or by Dr. Hodgson are entered, and nothing that occurred during the trance is omitted. All arrangements with the managers, all their introductory or concluding speeches, are given unabridged, and the reader is thus able to judge fully of the character and proceedings of the new controls.

There is, undeniably, a great difference between these and their honest but uncouth antecessor, Phinuit. Imperator is exalted and majestic; Rector gentle, old-fashioned in his speech, helpful and kind. Rector has got the real work, having succeeded George Pelham as amanuensis at the writing; as a rule the communicators were no more allowed to write themselves. The confusion which the contact with earthly conditions produced, Imperator

[1] "A Further Record of Observations of Certain Trance Phenomena," *Proceedings* S.P.R., Vol. XVI., pp. 46—49.

seemed specially able to remove. " I am all right, when Imperator is near," says Professor Hyslop's father at one of the sittings. " Doctor " is the medical member of the band, who diagnoses diseases and offers advice as Phinuit did formerly. Another member is " Prudens " ; he seems to have got the special task of " bringing light," like a kind of medium on the other side. At Professor Hyslop's second sitting Rector says : " We bring Prudens and more light will be given," and during the third one he appears after a pause, saying : " I am Prudens, and I give light."

In one respect, however, the new order was inferior to the period when George Pelham acted as secretary. It was often hard for Rector to understand the things he was to write down ; especially he had difficulty in grasping names, and this easily led to misunderstandings. In many cases, therefore, G. P. must step in and help. His free and easy mode of address makes an interesting contrast to Rector's dignified tone of language, and adds to the dramatic effect. When Professor Hyslop arranged with Dr. Hodgson that he was to have sittings in December, 1898, to the number of four, all precautions were taken to conceal who he was, and Rector, for want of another name, called him, in his discussions with Dr. Hodgson, " the four times friend." G. P.'s opinion about all this secretiveness resounds in a half-sarcastic remark to Dr. Hodgson at a seance in November : " How are you, H. ?——Imperator asked me to ask you whether I could help you out a bit when your almighty friend arrives." His occasional irritability, too, makes an effective contrast to the unchanging patience and gentleness of Rector.

For the rest, the habits of the Phinuit period were not entirely broken. It was still the practice that the sitter brought articles which had belonged to the person with whom he hoped to get into communication. But at the same time the part played by these articles seemed to have changed somewhat. Phinuit had been able to tell

a great deal about their deceased owners, but as often as not they did not seem to be present. On the other hand, spirits might manifest without being attracted by objects, nay, even without being much acquainted with the sitters; an instance hereof was Dr. Rich's manifestation at one of Sir Oliver Lodge's sittings with the Thompsons. It may therefore be said that the articles at that time served mostly to procure information about people, deceased or living, who were not present.

Under the new reign they were valued for another reason, namely, as a means of supplying their former owners with strength to communicate. The Hyslop sittings contain many instances hereof. "Can't you give me something belonging to him?" Rector asks at the second seance, after the manifestation of Professor Hyslop's father. At the fourth sitting the son will read something to the father which occasions Rector to say: "Give me something of his, that I may hold him quite clearly." And when Rector, in January, 1899, is going to make an appointment with Dr. Hodgson about future sittings for Professor Hyslop, the following conversation takes place between them:

"*R.* Canst thou not let us know at this point whether he can meet us or thee . . either him or thee, as we desire to prepare his father or friends for this ——

"*Dr. H.* Yes. It will be most convenient that I should have the days on his behalf in his absence.

"*R.* Yes. Well, friend, then we would have thee arrange at once for —— articles —— We would like some articles if possible worn by his father when in the body, also some one object handled a good deal by him —— we are desirous of keeping him as clear as possible, friend."

On a later occasion Rector says to Dr. Hodgson that Professor Hyslop's father will be "better able to recollect his earthly experiences, through coming into contact with his objects." This, no doubt, is only another mode of expression for his "getting clearer." But of course the demand for objects must create the suspicion that it is the *medium* who wants them, in order to procure by

psychometrizing the information that is passed off as the "recollections" of the communicators to prove their identity. As regards Mrs. Piper, it ought, though, to be pointed out that there are a number of cases where there are no articles, but where the communicator is both unexpected and uncalled for;—such were, for instance, Dr. Rich and "Aunt Sallie," not to speak of the large number of spirits that only appear for a moment to disappear again. As a case where there was not even an attraction to the sitters, may from a later period be mentioned that of Isaac Thompson,[1] who had had sittings with Mrs. Piper in Liverpool in 1889–90. He had died in 1903, and his son, during a stay in Boston in December, 1905, had a single seance where messages purported to come from his father, but which was on the whole unsatisfactory. He was, however, obliged to leave America immediately afterwards; the medium, of course, had not been told who he was. Two days later Rector asked Dr. Hodgson: "Have you the influences [*i.e.*, articles] of the young man's father?" There were no articles, and Dr. Hodgson had never met Mr. Thompson living. Nevertheless, the latter appeared, and succeeded in identifying himself. But previously George Pelham begged Dr. Hodgson to encourage him: "If he says anything clearly, congratulate him, help him by words of encouragement only, remember he has nothing or no one except yourself to attract him here." Here it is plainly stated what significance the objects and the sitters are considered to have for the communication, but at the same time, it is seen that everything does not depend on them.

. . . . . .

The chief communicator at Professor Hyslop's sittings was his father, Robert Hyslop. He was born in 1821, and had lived on a farm in Ohio until 1889, when he moved west into a neighbouring State. He returned to his old

[1] Sir Oliver Lodge, *The Survival of Man*, pp. 267 *seqq.*

home, and died in the house of his brother-in-law, James Carruthers, in August, 1896. He had lost his first wife, Martha Ann, in 1869, and was married a second time, in 1872, to Margaret, usually called Maggie, who outlived him. His children were by his first marriage Professor James Hyslop and four more sons, and a daughter, and by his second marriage one daughter. Besides, three daughters and a son had died as children, the daughters respectively four months, two years, and three years old, the son four and a half years old. The two last mentioned, Anna and Charles, died at about the same time in 1864, when their brother James was ten years old. These two are among the communicators. Other relatives who communicated were Professor Hyslop's uncle by marriage, James McClellan, who died in 1876, and the husband of his father's sister Eliza, James Carruthers, who died in December, 1898. The husband of another aunt had also died a short time before the sittings, but did not manifest. James McClellan's son Robert, who died in 1897, made his appearance at several sittings. Of Professor Hyslop's mother, who had been dead for thirty years, only a few glimpses are caught.

Regarded from an evidential point of view, the manifestation of all these persons, each of them in an identifying manner, no doubt presents a great interest. But the strongest impression left upon the reader by these sittings, which made Professor Hyslop himself a believer in the communication of the dead, is due to the image presented of his father there. In the extracts of the dialogues given below it will, therefore, above all, be attempted to produce an idea of this image, while with regard to the remaining communicators, only a few suggestive points will be indicated. That at the same time many evidential statements will get in, goes without saying. Mrs. Piper did not suspect who the sitter was ; she did not even see him in her normal state. So small a thing, say, as his being addressed as " James," is evidential.

It is not until the second sitting, on December 24th, 1898, that we make the acquaintance of the old farmer. The first seance had taken place on the day before, and had made a very confused impression. Of the Hyslop family, nobody but perhaps the brother Charles seemed able to get in a word. Professor Hyslop said during the sitting to Dr. Hodgson: "There's nothing with any possibility in the whole thing except Charles." It turned out at a later time, after the report had been published, that it was the communicators from the seances of an earlier sitter who had put in an appearance.[1] Not even George Pelham could master the situation on this occasion.

But the next day brought a change. "It was," Professor Hyslop writes, "as if the trance personalities had consulted over the situation, and had become assured of the right communicators." After some introductory remarks by Rector, etc., the hand wrote as follows:

"James, James. Speak James. James, speak to me—— I am not ill. Oh, oh, I want you so much —— I want to see you. I want to tell you everything —— They tell me I will soon be all right and able to help you —— I heard you, James, and I am glad. I heard you say something."

During the whole of the sitting Professor Hyslop kept silent as far as possible, for fear of advancing statements that might detract from the evidentialness of what occurred in the trance. By degrees, as the sittings progressed, this caution, no doubt, grew less necessary; but quite openly he did not speak until the very last of his twelve seances, in June, 1899. His taciturnity makes a strange contrast to the father's yearning to speak with him and difficulty in understanding his silence. Not less oddly does the son's suspiciousness and constant desire to obtain "tests" contrast with the father's longing to talk of things which seem more important to him, above all of the opinions he held before his death about a future life, and their relation to his

[1] *Proceedings* Am. S.P.R., Vol. IV., pp. 3 *seqq.*

present knowledge. This disparity between the feelings of the communicator and the sitter's object in experimenting is the tone which pervades both Professor Hyslop's and many other sittings. Even if the communicator has fully grasped the aim of the sitter, it is often difficult for him to conceive that it is, above all, proofs of his identity that are wanted. But it enhances, no doubt, the dramatic effect that such is the case.

Especially in the beginning, Mr. Hyslop was unable to communicate for any length of time. He was replaced for a moment by his son Charles.

"*Ch.* I will ask you if you remember brother Charles.
"*Dr. H.* Is that *brother* Charles?
"*Ch.* I say yes. I do not want to be put out, because I can help the rest to come. Don't send me away. Don't. I want to tell you about father."

Charles seems to have been present already at the first sitting; and on a later occasion his father said: "Charles saw the light and spoke of it before he came here, James." Thus he really seemed to be justified in demanding that they should not send him away.

After Charles the recently departed uncle Carruthers appeared. He was sufficiently identified through his mention of his wife Eliza, etc., but did not give his own name. When Mr. Hyslop returned, he asked: "Do you know Uncle Charles? He is here." Professor Hyslop did not understand whom he referred to; but it turned out at later sittings that it was the name Carruthers, pronounced "Crothers," which Rector had been unable to reproduce. He persisted in calling this uncle Charles, or else Clarke; only by degrees it dawned upon Professor Hyslop who was meant when these names were given.

In the following part of the sitting Mr. Carruthers discovered Dr. Hodgson and asked:

"*Mr. C.* You are not Robert's son? You are not George [Professor Hyslop's brother], are you?
"*Prof. H.* No, I am not George.
"*Mr. C.* No, James, I know you very well, but this one . . did you know the boys? Do you know me?"

Dr. Hodgson conceived it to be Mr. Hyslop speaking; so he explained who he himself was, and profiting by the occasion introduced the question of tests. He asked the communicator to think over some striking incidents so that his son might feel his presence by his recalling old memories. Mr. Hyslop understood him very well:

"*Mr. H.* I thank you for helping me. I see better now, and I will help him in every possible way to know all that we both know. I could not hear very well before, but I understand better now.

"Do you recall your lectures, and, if so, to whom do you recite now? I often hear them in my own mind —— Do you remember what my feeling was about this life?

"*Prof. H.* Yes, I do.

"*Mr. H.* Well, I was not so far wrong after all. I felt sure that there would be some knowledge of this life, but you were doubtful, remember.

"*Prof. H.* Yes, I remember.

"*Mr. H.* You had your own ideas which were only yours, James.

"*Prof. H.* Yes, I know.

"*Mr. H.* Well, it is not a fault ——"

After a short absence Mr. Hyslop returned, and Rector said:

"*R.* We see thy father returning to thee —— He will recall every fact he ever knew. He says he thought even more, if possible, of you than all the rest. Do you think so? he asks.

"*Prof. H.* Yes, I do think so.

"*Mr. H.* It is my feeling, James, and why not express it?

"*Prof. H.* That is right, father.

"*Mr. H.* Do you recall the fact of my being frank?

"*Prof. H.* Yes, I do.

"*Mr. H.* Sincerity of purpose . . . my sincerity. I recall the struggles you had over your work well, very well. Everything in life should be done with sincerity of purpose. I know well all the difficulties which you encounter. But keep on as you have been and you will master them ere long. So many different ideas are not easily managed. But never mind, do not be troubled about it, it will not last for ever, and I am getting stronger.

"*Prof. H.* No, I will not trouble any more about it.

"*Mr. H.* Well, do you really think you understand? And I will come again with more clearness with the help of

this man who wears the cross [*i.e.* Imperator]. James, my son, James my son, speak to me, I am going far away.

"*Prof. H.* Yes, father, I shall be pleased to see you again. I shall have to go now.

"*Mr. H.* I am too far off to think more for you. J. H. H. {R.}"

The initials are those of Professor Hyslop. In the waking stage the medium whispered "Hyslop."

Professor Hyslop states that many of the expressions used by the communicator were characteristic of his father, for instance: *recite*, "I was not so far wrong," "you had your own ideas," "it is my feeling, and why not express it." Mr. Hyslop had given his son James an education in the hope of seeing him as a minister; his apostasy nearly broke his heart, but what reconciled him to it was that he saw how "terribly in earnest" the son was about his opinions. When discussing them the father would always insist that the great thing was the "sincerity of purpose." He had himself, Professor Hyslop says, a remarkably clear insight, and saw well the intellectual difficulties of his own faith.

The third sitting, two days later, was long and important. Mr. Hyslop soon appeared.

"*Mr. H.* James, James, James, speak my son, to me. I am coming, coming to you, hear . . hear —— Where are you, James?

"*Prof. H.* I am here, father, is that you?

"*Mr. H.* Yes, it is I, James, I who is speaking to you. It is I who is speaking to you.

"*Prof. H.* Yes, I am glad to see you or hear from you.

"*Mr. H.* I wanted to ask you before I got too weak of the story I used to tell of a fire ——

"Where are my books, James? I want something to think over and I will keep quite near you."

This was taken to mean that he wanted an "article," and such a one was produced.

"*Mr. H.* I see clearly now, and oh if I could only tell you all that is in my mind. It was not an hallucination, but a reality, but I felt it would be possible for me to reach you.

"*Prof. H.* Do you remember more about that fire?

"*Mr. H.* Oh yes, the fire. Strange I was forgetting to go on. Yes. —— Were the books destroyed?

"*Prof. H.* No ——

"*Mr. H.* I wish you had them. I remember all. I am thinking . . ."

Here he was interrupted by Dr. Hodgson saying something to Rector, which led to the following remark by the latter about the communicator:

"*R.* He is a very intelligent spirit and will do a great deal for us when he realizes where he is now and what we are requesting him to do.

"*Mr. H.* James, are you here still? If so I want very much to know if you remember what I promised you. I told you if it would be possible for me to return to you I would.

"*Prof. H.* Yes, I remember.

"*Mr. H.* —— I remember well our talks about this life and its conditions, and there was a great question of doubt as to the possibility of communication; that, if I remember rightly, was the one question which we talked over. Will return soon. Wait for me."

Professor Hyslop had visited his father in the beginning of 1895, having been lecturing on psychical research in Indianapolis a few days before. He had talked much with the father on the subject, and found his attitude towards it more receptive than he had expected. Afterwards he had written to him on his deathbed, and begged him "to come to him after it was all over." His stepmother, on reading the letter, had asked her husband what was meant by this, and he had answered: "Oh, I don't know," an expression, Mrs. Hyslop says, which he always used when he did not want to tell what was on his mind. In the reply which was dictated to his wife and written by her, he did not refer to it. A promise, then, he had not made.

At this point of the sitting, Prudens, as alluded to above, made his appearance to improve upon the conditions for communicating:

"*P.* I am Prudens, and I give light I am thy friend and thou will call for me when thou dost need help. P.

"*Prof. H.* Thank you.

"*P.* Mr. H. [*sic*] returns.

"*Mr. H.* I feel better now, James. I felt very much confused when I first came here. I could not seem to make out why I could not make you hear me at first —— I would like to hear you speak.

"*Prof. H.* Yes, father, free your mind. I shall listen and understand.

"*Mr. H.* I will leave nothing undone, but will reach you clearly and talk as we used, when I could speak independently of thought. I have not yet found out why it is that I have difficulty in speech."

This made Professor Hyslop think of his father's last illness, which was probably cancer of the larynx but thought to be catarrh only. He asked a question which was misinterpreted by the father, and led to a touching remark on his part:

"*Prof. H.* Do you know what the trouble was when you passed out?

"*Mr. H.* No, I did not realize that we had any trouble, James, ever. I thought we were always most congenial to each other. I do not remember any trouble, tell me what was it about, you do not mean with me, do you . . . "

Professor Hyslop explained that he meant his sickness, and the communicator now made an attempt to state what had been his sufferings immediately before his death. There is a noteworthy difference between this subjective mode of characterizing illness, and Phinuit's medical diagnoses in former days. But Professor Hyslop wanted the reply "catarrh," or "throat-trouble," and continued his questioning until the communicator grew tired and must leave. Rector now said: "Friend, they have sent thy brother here for a few moments to wait thy father's return." Both Charles, and afterwards the sister, Annie, spoke. Then the father returned. After an unsuccessful attempt to give the name of a medicine, he replied to a remark by Professor Hyslop about Annie as follows:

"Yes. She has been here longer than I have, James, and is clearer in her thoughts when she is trying to speak, but do not feel troubled about it. I will in time be able to tell you all. I want you to know that I am at this moment trying to think of anything but sickness —— "

Afterwards he began to speak of the conversations they had held about the work of the son, but was interrupted. A little later " Uncle Charles " (Carruthers) put in some words, and when it was once more the turn of the father, he began by an introduction of himself which seems to contain a jesting allusion to the fact that not all communicators were so clear as he was. Here for the first time his name was fully given. Prudens, as has been seen, confined himself to the abbreviation " Mr. H :"

" *Mr. H.* Yes, Hyslop. I know who I am —— And long before the Sun shall set for you I will give you a full and complete account of your old father, James. Keep quiet, do not worry about anything, as I used to say. It does not pay. Remember this ?

" *Prof. H.* Yes, father, I remember that well.

" *Mr. H.* That, James, was my advice always —— You are not the strongest man, you know——Remember, it does not pay, and life is too short there for you to spend it in worrying. You will come out all safe and well, and will one day be reunited with us, and we shall meet face to face, and you will know me well. What you cannot have, be content without.——I am a little weary, James, but I will return and recall if possible, my medicine. He is taking me away.

" *Dr. H.* Yes, you will have one day more now with your son.

" *Mr. H.* Oh, let me refresh myself and return to him. Seek and ye shall find.

" *Prof. H.* Father, good-bye until to-morrow and I will see you then.

" *Mr. H.* Come in to-morrow and see how I am getting along. Do you remember my saying this to you ? "

All that Mr. Hyslop here claimed to have said while living, was correct. He used to say : " Do not worry, it does not pay," " life is too short," etc. It is curious to see that now he says : " Life is too short *there* " ; just so it behoved one who had survived death to speak about life on earth. " Come in to-morrow and see how I am getting along," were the words which he used to say to his son when he visited him during his last illness.

Before the third sitting concluded, Dr. Hodgson had given Rector to understand that it would be useful to

get Mr. Hyslop to think over some incidents to tell his son on the morrow. The consequences of this intimation appeared at the sitting of that day, where the communicator took great pains to recall trivialities instead of speaking only of those things that interested himself:

"*Mr. H.* James, James I am here. My thoughts are clearer now——I can see and hear better than ever. Your voice to me does not seem so far away. I will come nearer day by day —— and all that transpired between us whilst in the body I will refer to, that you may be sure it is I. I remember very well indeed and what I said. I was most emphatic in my desire to know the truth and make you know it if possible. [To Dr. Hodgson:] Are you with James?

"*Dr. H.* Yes ——

"*Mr. H.* Well, will you help me to return later if I wish to return? If so, I will try and free my mind now.

"*Dr. H.* I shall be very pleased to take messages to your son.

"*Mr. H.* Well, I will not feel troubled then, because I have no further talks with him now. James, do you remember the things I took out West?"

After this followed divers tests. "I remember Himi [*i.e.*, Hyomei]," said Mr. Hyslop. This was the reply to a question that had been put to him about his medicine at the preceding sitting. He added: "I will give him all of them." "All of them?" Dr. Hodgson asked, greatly surprised. Mr. Hyslop had taken a variety of patent medicines, and he succeeded at this and later seances in giving the names of a number of them. With regard to many of them it required a careful investigation on the part of Professor Hyslop to ascertain that his father had in fact used them. "Do you remember the little knife—the little brown handle[d] one?——Ask Willie [his son] about the knife," and so forth. But he soon reverted to the things which he had most at heart:

"*Mr. H.* I wish I could step in and hear you at college and see all that disturbs you. I would soon right things there for you. I had a will of my own . . . perhaps you will remember.

"*Prof. H.* Yes, father, I remember, but it was not a bad will.

"*Mr. H.* I am glad you think so. But if the rest had been like you, perhaps I should not have refused them anything."

Professor Hyslop writes that all this is very pertinent. Afterwards he read aloud a series of utterances explaining to the communicator the aim of the sittings. He said among other things that he had not asked many questions nor reminded him of any important facts, because doing so would be interpreted here on earth as suggesting the answers themselves. "Ah, yes; I remember the difficulties," Mr. Hyslop put in, and the son continued: "You know it is the work of Christ, and you will remember that I always said that I wished to live the life of Christ, even if I was not a believer." "Perfectly. Yes. That is surely James," exclaimed the father. He had not until now heard many words that could convince him that he was really speaking to his son.

It was the object of Professor Hyslop to impart to his father, by means of this statement, a more complete understanding of the importance of the work that was performed through the sittings. He understood it entirely. The conversation went on in the following manner:

"*Mr. H.* I will push from this side whilst you call from yours, and from my boyhood to now I will recall *everything* for you. *Go on I am waiting.*

"*Prof. H.* Yes, father, I have read all that I wished to read, and I shall be glad if you can recall and tell anything about a railroad collision.

"*Mr. H.* Yes, I think I will, all about it, but do not ask me just yet, James, . . just yet."

One cannot help sympathizing with the communicator, if he was not at that moment disposed to think of an old story about a railroad collision. Professor Hyslop himself acknowledges in his report that his remark "shows as much incoherence and irrelevancy as could ever be charged to a discarnate spirit."

His next question: "Do you remember much about your religious life?" fell into better ground, and resulted

for one thing in the communicator asking: "What do you remember, James, of our talks about Swedenborg?"

This was interesting also for the reason that Professor Hyslop himself did not remember that he had talked with his father about Swedenborg, and did not even believe that he had known anything of him. But when he wrote to his stepmother about it, he got the following reply: "He did talk with me about Swedenborg after you had been there——I remember the conversation on the Sabbath day you were at our house at Delphi about psychical research, and your father was the first to speak of Swedenborg. In answer to something you said he replied: 'that was Swedenborg's belief.' I cannot remember much of the conversation."

A little later the father said:

"I am glad you have not given me any suggestions for your sake, but it has perplexed me a little, and at times seemed unlike yourself. I faintly recall the trouble on the subject of spirit-return, and I see and understand now."

The conversation was broken off before he had a mind to leave. "He longs to remain with him," said Rector, "but Imperator is taking him away." Afterwards, Rector said to Dr. Hodgson: "Friend, thou knowest not the food which lieth in store for thee regarding this new communicator. He is all that is good and true."

. . . . . .

In February, 1899, Dr. Hodgson had five sittings with Mrs. Piper on behalf of Professor Hyslop, who was in New York. In the interval Rector had several times talked of Mr. Hyslop and of the desirability of giving him an opportunity of communicating. "Our friend Hyslop is anxious to see you many more times if you think that is desirable," he said on January 18th, and a week later: "We have a great and good work to do with this dear spirit Hyslop——a very high and intelligent spirit is he, and no barrier between them, *viz.*, himself and son." When he at last got permission to come, he seemed, however, a little disappointed that it was not "James." It

happens sometimes that "the machine" does register fragments of conversations which are held apparently among the spirits themselves, and which would not seem destined to be reported; it belongs to the mysteries of the trance drama, and has not found any explanation. Thus, the following speech by Rector must be conceived to be addressed to Mr. Hyslop:

"*R.* No he is not . . but it is his friend . . very well. No, not James but Hodgson. Yes . . come.
"*Mr. H.* Yes, friend, I am pleased to meet you. I wish to speak to James, but I understand he is not here, but sends you in his place ——"

Professor Hyslop had in January communicated the result of his inquiry about Swedenborg to Dr. Hodgson. The latter had told it to Rector, by whom Mr. Hyslop had apparently been informed of it. His first words to Dr. Hodgson referred to this subject:

"*Mr. H.* I am thinking at the moment of what I referred to concerning Emanuel Swedenborg. I am glad to know that he understood my meaning.
"*Dr. H.* Yes.
"*Mr. H.* Yes, now I wish to tell him about another subject ——"

Mr. Hyslop had thought of divers incidents, and a great portion of the sittings was employed in speaking of them. On the whole his recollections seemed correct, but in several cases it at first looked otherwise; sometimes he was only after long investigations proved to be right.

In the midst of his attempts to recall railway accidents and fires, he reverted to his dearest memories. "I often think of the long talks we used to have during my last years in earth life of the possibilities of communication with each other——." It is curious to see that it was Rector, and not Dr. Hodgson, who would not tolerate this. During a momentary absence of the communicator he enforced on Dr. Hodgson the necessity of making him recall his experiences, whereupon the latter told Mr. Hyslop that "James would be very pleased" if he would

do so. "Yes, well then I may as well tell you all I can remember," answered the father, almost as with a sigh. "I begin to see what James is wishing me to do," he added a little later.

Afterwards, however, Dr. Hodgson explained about the trance and the writing, and this interested him highly. "Indeed," he says. "Then, well then what I say is written out for you?" "Yes," Dr. Hodgson answered, and told about Rector. "Oh yes, I begin to see," he interrupted him, "but I can see Rector and hear him speak to me." Dr. Hodgson went on explaining, and said at last:

"*Dr. H.* Well now, if James had said to you when you were in the body, 'come with me and see a lady in trance. Her hand is controlled by a spirit,' you probably would not have believed it.

"*Mr. H.* No probably not.

"*Dr. H.* And if James had passed out of the body and you were left behind, and if I came to you and said, 'Your son James wishes to see you and talk to you,' and if I prevailed upon you to come here, we will suppose, and you were in the body with me and James where you are, talking to Rector—what do you think James would try to remind you of?

"*Mr. H.* Why everything that we used to do together of course, friend, or in other words *all*. I say all, about his earthly experiences, because he would like me to make sure it was he.

"*Dr. H.* Exactly. Now that is just what he wants. He wants . . .

"*Mr. H.* Well, it is just what he will get, then, because I know perfectly well who and what I am, and I know what would please my son James, and I will do all in my power to prove that I am his father ——"

That Dr. Hodgson's explanation impressed the communicator appears from an utterance of his four months later at a sitting by Professor Hyslop:

"I had no idea at first what you really wished of me, but it all came to me when you [hand indicating Dr. Hodgson] said 'Well how would you have James know it was you.'"

He had on this occasion endeavoured to recall the life in their little family circle in the distant period when his eldest son was one of them. He had not yet fully comprehended that knowledge of their joint experiences was

not considered a conclusive proof of his being the one he purported to be, because they might be conceived to be read from his son's own mind.

The following sittings by Dr. Hodgson were mostly devoted to test questions, as before, under a faint protest on the part of Mr. Hyslop. "I have so many things to say of far greater importance in a way," he once replied when Dr. Hodgson thanked him for having told him about "the medicine and gown and reading the paper and so on." Not until the last of the five sittings, on February 22nd, 1899, where Dr. Hodgson read aloud a letter which he had received from Professor Hyslop, but which was directed to the father, did he become fully interested. His eagerness was so great that he interrupted the reading and replied to the contents as if the son had himself been present and talked to him:

"*Dr. H.* [reading] I remember when you took me to the station to start to college. Do you remember how you felt then?

"*Mr. H. Yes I do, well.* At the parting. It was one of the most hopeful of my life. And do you remember what I said to you then? Write, as I cannot see you often. Write often as I shall be with you constantly in thought, James. This is the starting point in your life. Take advantage of it, improve your time, let me know how you are getting on daily and keep up a stout heart. Want for nothing. Keep to the right, be just in all things. I shall be lonely enough, but I look forward to the future."

Professor Hyslop writes that this is a very good reproduction of what his father said when parting from him. The statement "want for nothing" is literally what he did say, though his pecuniary circumstances did not justify him in saying so.

When Dr. Hodgson had finished reading, the communicator said:

"God bless you, my son. Do you remember this expression? [To Dr. Hodgson] I wish you to know that to me James was all I could ask for a son, and when I left him or he left me I was heart-broken in one sense, but I felt that I had much to look forward to ——"

This was the only occasion, Professor Hyslop adds, on which he ever saw his father shed tears.

. . . . . .

On May 29th, 1899, began the second series of Professor Hyslop's personal sittings, of which there were eight. They are of much the same character as the first series; only the test questions played a still larger part than they had done in the beginning.

Dramatically correct it is that while in Dr. Hodgson's sittings the father had been the sole communicator, now when Professor Hyslop was himself present a large number of his relatives appeared. "I have not seen so many here around the light for a long time," Rector remarked already at the first seance. Perhaps this was the reason why George Pelham turned up as assistant at the second sitting; he had not been present at any Hyslop sitting since the very first. "Look out, H[odgson], I am here. G. P.," he announced himself; "Imperator sent me some moments ago." He began at once to make himself useful by improving Rector's reproduction, *viz.*, "McAllen," of the name of Professor Hyslop's cousin, McClellan. "Sounds like McLellen, G. P.," he inserts in the midst of the writing. He did good service on several occasions.

For the rest the seances went on in the former manner; recollections were mixed with references to matters which more naturally filled the thoughts of the communicator. Professor Hyslop obtained much evidence for the identity of his father; not the least valuable were his many remarks about the dead and living members of his family. More, perhaps, than anything, the manner in which they were put forth served to convince him; the selection from the standpoint of the father and of nobody else; the faculty to distinguish between what the son must know from personal experience, and what he could only have been told about by others, etc., etc. The same applies to the other communicators; each of them speaks from his own point of view; the different facts—for

instance, their mutual relationship, or the length of time that had elapsed since their death, are made use of with a never failing precision; they deal with names in accordance with their habit in life, etc. Professor Hyslop's cousin, Robert McClellan, turns up and alludes to "Uncle Hyslop," *viz.*, the father of the professor; or inquires after "Robert," and replies to the question which Robert it is: "Rob Hyslop of course, which other could I mean?" Professor Hyslop's brother Robert was always called Rob. The long deceased brother Charles talks about the "new sister Hettie," *i.e.*, his half-sister. The sister Annie says: "I want to help father—because I came here first and long ago." There are examples *ad libitum*. Here is no confusion, no confounding of the numerous members of the large family. What confusion there is, is of a different type, and most often explicable by the existing conditions—Rector's not always correct perception of names, etc., the indisposition of the communicators in the earthly sphere—or as failing memory. As good as always the statements contained a core of truth that pointed to misrecollection and not ignorance being the cause of the error. Very often, too, the confusion was due to *the sitter's* deficient memory, or to his misapprehension of what was alluded to.

With regard to the theories which eventually ought to explain away his own existence, Mr. Hyslop continued to display a certain impatience. At the third sitting he said to the son:

"Shut out the thought theory and do not let it trouble you. I went on theorizing all my earthly life and what did I gain by it? My thoughts only became more subtle and unsatisfactory ——"

And he continued, with an allusion to the topic which, as seen above, had been discussed between Professor Hyslop and his father during the visit in 1895, at which time "the thought theory" had also been the subject of their conversation:

"Now speaking of Swedenborg. What does it matter

whether his teachings were right or wrong so long as we are individually and ourselves here ? "

George Pelham, too, is a little sarcastic on this point. At the sixth sitting he made his appearance and got a short conversation with Dr. Hodgson:

" *G. P.* H[odgson], how are you ? I have just been called upon to lend a helping hand. You see I am not wholly isolated from you.
" *Dr. H.* Good, George, were you here last time ?
" *G. P.* For a few moments. I helped a man named Charles [*i.e.*, Professor Hyslop's brother] but I did not get a chance to say, How de do, H.
" *Dr. H.* All right, George.
" *G. P.* I am going after the elderly gentleman, look out for me.
" *Dr. H.* We will.
" *G. P.* Got those theories all straightened out yet, H. ?
" *Dr. H.* Pretty fairly.
" *G. P.* I am going. Auf Wiedersehen. G.P."

At this sitting Professor Hyslop asked his father to tell something that had occurred before his own birth, but which his two aunts might possibly remember. That Mr. Hyslop understood well that the object was to exclude the interpretation of telepathy from the son, appears from his instantaneous attempt to comply with the request:

" *Mr. H.* Will you kindly ask Aunt Eliza if she remembers a young man named Baker, and if she recall going to a prayer meeting one evening with him, and if she remembers who teased her about him. And ask them both if they remember Jerry.
" *Prof. H.* [to Dr. Hodgson] That's right.
" *Mr. H.* Perhaps you may know of this. If you do, say so, James, and I will think of something which you do not know."

Professor Hyslop had heard about Jerry, and his remark to Dr. Hodgson referred to the latter's reading of the name. One cannot help acknowledging the intelligence and quickness of reasoning of the communicator, first in devising something which could hardly be known to the son, and then in comprehending the intimation of his knowing it

which the remark "That's right" implied. The story about the young man Professor Hyslop had never heard, and his Aunt Eliza was disposed to deny it, but finished by admitting its correctness, perhaps with the exception of the name Baker. Several statements from the following sittings were likewise verified by the aunts.

From first to last Mr. Hyslop was interested in the son's work as a psychical researcher. This interest had at the first sitting of the new series led to a curious remark:

"*Mr. H.* Do not go more to that place. I am not there. I am not there and you cannot find me if you go.
"*Prof. H.* What place is that, father?
"*Mr. H.* With the younger men trying to find me. They are not light and I cannot reach you there."

Immediately after his first sittings, Professor Hyslop had instituted a system of experiments with some young men in New York to imitate the Piper phenomenon. The object was only to demonstrate it; there was no medium present. It seems to be to these experiments that Mr. Hyslop alluded. Now, at the sixth sitting, he reverted to the subject of psychical research:

"*Mr. H.* Do you remember our conversation on this subject? Do you remember your last visit with me?
"*Prof. H.* Yes.
"*Mr. H.* It was more particularly on this occasion than before.
"*Prof. H.* Yes, that is right. Do you know what I was doing just before I made the visit?
"*Mr. H.* Yes, I believe you had been experimenting on the subject and I remember of your telling me something about Hypnotism.
"*Prof. H.* Yes, I remember that well.
"*Mr. H.* And what did you tell me about some kind of manifestation which you were in doubt about?
"*Prof. H.* It was about apparitions near the point of death.
"*Mr. H.* Oh, yes, indeed, I recall it very well, and you told me about a young woman who had had some experiments [*i.e.*, experiences] and dreams.
"*Prof. H.* Yes, that is right.

" *Mr. H.* Which interested me very much, but yet you were doubtful about life after so-called death. Remember the long talks we had together on this, James ? "

The last sitting but one contains an interesting attempt to elucidate a former misunderstanding. Just as the uncle Carruthers had all the time gone by the name of Charles, or of Clarke, thus Professor Hyslop's stepmother had always been spoken of by a wrong name, *viz.*, Nannie, instead of Maggie (Margaret). The error had not been discovered at once, because there was an *aunt* Nannie who was often mentioned. But gradually it dawned upon Professor Hyslop that the latter was always called " Aunt Nannie," while all that was said about " Nannie " without prefix did fit the stepmother. It was George Pelham to whom it fell to clear up the matter, and his demeanour is very characteristic. It was on this occasion that he alluded, with some bitterness, to the treatment he had himself formerly been subjected to by the experimenters. His reproaches, however, were undeserved as regards Professor Hyslop, who had purposely abstained from asking for the name. But Dr. Hodgson did not understand this, and of his own accord introduced the question :

" *Dr. H.* The name of the mother in the body has never yet been rightly given.

" *R.* Has it been asked for ?

" *Dr. H.* The stepmother has been referred to in various ways, for example as Hettie's mother. She has also been called Nannie, but her name is not Nannie.——

" *R.* I cannot understand it.

" *Dr. H.* There have been several references to incidents which were true about the stepmother, but in referring to these things, the name Nannie . . .

" *G. P.* Well, why do you not come and say give me my stepmother's name and not confuse him [Mr. Hyslop] about anything except what you really want ?

" *Dr. H.* I think that it has been asked for directly but cannot be sure.

" *G. P.* Has it ? Very well, if she has a name you shall have it.

" *Dr. H.* I have drawn special attention to it because I

thought it might help you to know that there seems to be some peculiar difficulty about getting her name.

"*G. P.* I do not think so, H.; but I do think he would refer to it in his own way if let alone. I know how you confused me, by Jove, and I don't want any more of it. I am going to help him and he is going to tell all he knows from A to Z. No doubt about it, H., no one could be more desirous of doing so than he is."

Towards the end of the sitting George Pelham reappeared:

"*G. P.* I will speak for a moment, and say I do not see any reason for anxiety about Margaret. He said I suppose I might just as well tell you first as last and have done with it, as James may think I do not really know. Go tell him this for me. You see I got it out of him for you, H., but you no need to get nervous about it, old chap.

"*Dr. H.* All right, George, thanks.

"*G. P.* Well, I cannot hold him any longer, and you will get more later. I am glad to meet your friend even though you fail to say anything about him. [To Professor Hyslop] I am George Pelham, and glad to see you. I will stand by you at all costs.

"*Prof. H.* I am glad to meet you, especially as I know your brother in Columbia University.

"*G. P.* Yes, Charles.

"*Prof. H.* That is right.

"*G. P.* Good, I'll see you again. Auf Wiedersehen."

As may be seen, George has still some difficulty in reconciling himself to the distrust shown towards him, but has withal preserved the same combination of geniality and humour which was characteristic of him from the very first.

At the next sitting it was Rector who took occasion to reproach the experimenters for their not always rational proceedings. He had asked them already two days earlier to give the communicator time to grasp the meaning of their questions fully, and if he failed to answer that day let him think it over and reply at the next sitting. It was after this that Professor Hyslop asked for some memories from the time before his own birth, and that the father told of his sister Eliza, and promised

to recall other incidents. At the ensuing sitting there had been some confusion which Rector now explained in the following manner: "He came with his thoughts full of things concerning his last memories at the meeting before, and could not be made to understand that he should speak of other things." It can hardly be denied that Rector is right in his criticism, and that the investigators, in fact, made things difficult for the communicators. Their silence and distrust were a necessity; but the same hardly applies to their tendency to mix too many things together, and to pass too quickly from one matter to another, which Dr. Hodgson admits to have been a fault already at George Pelham's first manifestations. It is true, however, as Mr. Hyslop once said in another connection, that "what was their loss is our gain"; if it made it more difficult for the communicators to solve their task, it has in return increased the value of its solution for the research.

The above sitting was the last which Professor Hyslop held. But the interest of the trance personalities in procuring evidence did not stop there. A month later, on July 6th, 1899, Rector reminded Dr. Hodgson that there was much for Mr. Hyslop's son to do and look up yet. "There must not," he said, "be any neglect of duty in regard to this, *viz.*, the broken wheel, the visit of the sister to church, the prayer meeting *in the barn*, the sunstroke of one of the McLellan family." Mr. Hyslop himself put in: "I would say one word more only. Some of the things date back many years. Adieu."

It was mostly the incidents from the time before his son's birth he alluded to. The event of the sunstroke was not quite as old as that. But Professor Hyslop had known nothing about the existence of the uncle of James McClellan, David Elder by name, who had been afflicted in that manner more than thirty years ago, and he had great difficulty in finding the persons to confirm the fact. The communicators seemed at last to have fully com-

prehended what kind of evidence was best suited to refute "the thought theory."

The English *Proceedings* contain nothing more about Robert Hyslop. But his ardour to assist in the work of his son did not cool, and it is possible to renew the acquaintance with his sympathetic personality elsewhere.[1]

[1] See below, p. 341.

CHAPTER XV

THE JUNOT SITTINGS [1]

IMMEDIATELY after the Hyslop sittings a new series began, which covers a period of more than six years, and in several respects makes a singular contrast to the former. Mr. Hyslop was at his death an old man who had suffered much; who had lived his life to its end and gained its wisdom. Bennie Junot, the happy child of rich and loving parents, at the age of seventeen finished his earthly existence, to their deep grief, just at the moment when he was leaving his boyhood behind him. His father, Mr. Junot (pseudonym), who was a lawyer and lived a thousand miles west of Boston, had heard of Mrs. Piper, and applied to Dr. Hodgson, by whose intervention he obtained about a year after his son's death his first sittings with the famous medium. From thence and until the death of Dr. Hodgson he came to Boston once a year to find Bennie, most often accompanied by his wife; sometimes Bennie's brother Roble or sister Helen were also present. In the intervals there were sittings where Bennie came to Dr. Hodgson alone.

A great number of evidential statements are given in this series, which contains altogether sixty-five sittings,[2] and where several deceased relations of the Junots appeared. With a few exceptions, however, no information was given that had not been known at some time to some members of the family. But many of the clearest and most correct statements were made when Dr. Hodgson was alone, so that they, at any rate, cannot be explained

[1] Report on the Junot Sittings, by Helen de G. Verrall, *Proceedings* S.P.R., Vol. XXIV., pp. 351—664.

[2] The Junots had seances also after Dr. Hodgson's death, but these are not included in the report in the *Proceedings*.

as reading off the mind of a present person. The sittings were commented on at the time by Mr. Junot with a care that makes it easy to judge of the value of the statements.

Mr. Junot was introduced to Mrs. Piper anonymously, according to Dr. Hodgson's usual practice. A certain amount of information was, however, deliberately given to the communicator by the sitters. Bennie was not for the sake of evidence worried by far so much as George Pelham and Mr. Hyslop had been, although at a later point he learned to comprehend the importance of giving tests. Still less was he tormented through an unnatural attitude of the sitters like that which had in the beginning troubled Professor Hyslop's father. The outcome of this was a greater naturalness of the dialogue, and a greater joy in the conversations on the part of the communicator. This no doubt contributes to impart to the reader of the report a picture of a happy boy who exults in being able to communicate with his dear ones; this is, perhaps, the strongest impression left from this series of sittings—a boy, though, who seems to grow before the eyes of the reader during the six years of the acquaintance.

With regard to the question of "articles," the situation seems to be the same as at the Hyslop sittings. They were considered to be of a certain usefulness, but were not indispensable. Mr. Junot had for his first sitting brought some objects that had belonged to his son, but they were wrapped in thick paper and lay until far into the seance on a table on the other side of the room. Later they were unwrapped and handed to the medium. Several times in the course of the sittings Bennie alludes to the import of such objects; for instance: "I would like something at this moment, dear, and it will help me to keep clear"; "I only wish to get help so I can remain"; "my things help me very much."

The proceedings at the seances were the same as at the Hyslop sittings; Rector was acting as amanuensis at

the writing, while George Pelham now and again assisted in other ways. In the deep trance the communication took place exclusively by means of the hand, but in the so-called waking-stage Mrs. Piper might, among her own utterances, sometimes put forth something that seemed to be a rendering of the words of a communicator.

Mr. Junot's first sitting took place on June 16th, 1899, and commenced in the following manner:

"*R.* We see among our friends here a young man who seems dazed and puzzled. He is not near enough to us for us to give him much help at the moment but will be presently. George is here with him and trying to urge him to come closer ——

"*B.* I hear . . . I hear something. Where is my mother. I want very much to see her. I can breathe easier now. I want to go home now . . . And take up my studies and go on. I see some one who is very like my father. I want to see him very much.

"*Mr. J.* Speak, Bennie ——

"*B.* I . . I want to see you awfully . . I Father papa papa Pa Pa father I hear something strange . . can it be your voice

"*Mr. J.* Yes, Bennie.

"*B.* I . . You hear me . . do you hear me I . . wonder how I can reach you as I long to do. I heard all you said . . . And I want to tell you where I am. [To Dr. Hodgson] You are not my father ?"

Dr. Hodgson now explained that he had brought his father for him that he could free his mind to him:

"*B.* And can I do so now ?

"*Dr. H.* Yes.

"*B.* Do you [know ?] the boys (?) and if they will be glad to see me. I want to see father more than any one except mama."

This was the introduction which was followed by inquiries on the part of both. It appeared that Bennie knew a great deal about things that had happened after his death. He had apparently, as he continued to do, watched the doings of those he loved on earth. Alluding to a cow-boy named Harry, who had been his friend

on the farm where the family passed the summer, he said :

"*B.* I want to know about Harry.
"*Mr. J.* He wrote your mother lately.
"*B.* I thought he sent the photograph to her.
"*Mr. J.* He did, yes.
"*B.* I heard her say it looked like him —— Did Harry say he would send me any message ?
"*Mr. J.* Mamma wrote and told Harry that you had gone away and left us.
"*B.* I wonder what he thought when he heard that. Give him my love and tell him I will never forget the good times we had together."

It is funny that Bennie thinks it likely that Harry would send him a message, and very boyish that he wonders what the cow-boy thought when he heard of his death. Evidently he feels himself to be an interesting person on account of that circumstance.

The next sitting took place on the morrow, and was full of eager inquiries from Bennie, both about people and about the things he had left. There were, however, also put questions to him ; for quite exempt from the desire of tests the father was not. But Bennie's way of replying differs in a characteristic manner from that of other communicators. For instance, Mr. Junot asked him about a gold scarf-pin with which he had formerly presented his son, and which he had now brought to the sitting :

"*Mr. J.* What did I tell you about the pin ? Where did I say the gold came from ?
"*B.* This came from . . Oh I never can say it. *Co* . . Who was the man who went out there with you and . . I had so many pieces of it.
"*Mr. J.* Do you mean the miner man ?
"*B.* Yes I do, but his name has gone from me completely."

The scarf-pin was made of a Colorado nugget presented to Mr. Junot with a number of other nuggets from a miner friend.

One of the matters that Bennie had most at heart was his horse, which he wanted his sister to have.

"*B.* I want her to have my horse, want her to have my horse . . I do very much.
"*Mr. J.* She's got a nice new horse of her own.
"*B. I know it.* I know it, and . .
"*Mr. J.* And your horse has been sent to be sold. I think it *has* been sold.
"*B.* Has it . . I don't *think so.* I wanted *her* to have it."

The horse had been sold but not delivered, and was recovered by telegram. Mr. Junot had no more sittings that time, but on July 6th, 1899, Dr. Hodgson asked George Pelham whether there was any message from Bennie. The latter now appeared himself, saying:

"*B.* Oh give my love, my dearest love to papa, mama Roble and Helen.
"*Dr. H.* I will.
"*B.* Oh tell them I love them oh so *much* and I will do all I can to help them know I live. I am so glad about the horse. I do not know what to say."

It was only in a letter of July 12th that Dr. Hodgson learned that Mr. Junot had stopped the sale of Bennie's horse.

In the month of March in the following year Mr. Junot returned, this time accompanied by Bennie's mother. Bennie's joy was excessive:

"*B.* Dad Dad Dad yes I am coming dear —— It is I, Bennie don't you know me.
"*Mr. J.* Yes Bennie, we hear you.
"*B.* I see mamma I am so glad so glad . . Oh do you know all I feel for you ——
"*Mrs. J.* Bennie, I often think you come to me. Do you?
"*B.* Come to you . . Yes indeed I do and mama there is no doubt about it. I do see and know a great deal about you and the things you do. I see all the pictures of myself and all my own work."

Mr. Junot writes that they had a great many pictures of Bennie lately placed in their rooms, also various pieces of his handiwork. As to Bennie's mode of address to himself, he states that he used to call him both "Dad" and "Pa" and "Papa."

Later Bennie asked to be left alone with his mother for a little time. "I want to see you, Mamma, as I did before I came here, and he [Dr. Hodgson] confuses me," he said to the mother, and a long conversation ensued. Then the father returned, asking: "Do you want me, Bennie?" and Bennie answered: "Yes I do. Oh I am so glad. There never was a boy so glad."

And thus he goes on chattering, about "Grandpa Junot," and the farm, his much beloved summer home, and concludes with a gracious permission for Dr. Hodgson to return: "Call him back once more and let him help me." Bennie seems somewhat prone to regard this stranger as a subordinate person. "Hello, dear dad, is that you dear," he says a few days later; "just you talk to me and don't mind that man. Rector knows him." In a short time, however, they became the best of friends.

Towards his parents Bennie was unceasingly grateful and loving. At the next sitting he said, among other things:

"I almost never see you but that you do not speak of me and it makes me very happy —— But the one thing that has troubled me more than anything since I came to this life is the thought of dear mamma's feeling that she could do more for me. I tell you now that she did all she could and nothing could have kept me in the body. Do you hear me dear . . ."

Before the parents left Boston, Bennie had got informed of the import of the evidence he might be able to furnish. He commenced their last sitting by clearing up something that had become confused in the preceding one, and afterwards turned to new statements, interposing: "I know perfectly well what you want of me now, because Rector told me." And he displayed certainly in the subsequent part of the seance a remarkable energy to satisfy their demands.

In the midst of the sitting the communication was, however, on the point of being cut off too early. Bennie ceased to speak, and Rector said to Dr. Hodgson:

"Friend, I think — if we could ask thee to go a little way off for a time it might help us to keep him."

Dr. Hodgson now left the room, and Bennie returned :

" *B.* Yes dad here I am again —— I begin to think again. And my head is getting clear since that man called George went away with his father.

" *R.* [to Dr. Hodgson who had returned] That is thy father, friend."

The little episode shows how George Pelham helped to keep other communicators away. Apparently, Dr. Hodgson's father had come to speak to his son, and G. P. took him away because his presence confused Bennie, who at the time was the principal person. " What is it, H. ? Want my help ? " G. P. interposed on another occasion ; " I am here on Deck."

A few weeks after the Junots had left, Bennie had some conversations with Dr. Hodgson. He learned to understand what part the latter played as intermediary between his parents and himself, and displayed now towards him also the geniality of his nature. They talked together about all sorts of things, memories of the past and the actual situation. Bennie told about Rector and the band, saying :

" You should see the kindly men who are teaching me how to find the way to speak clearly. You would be as glad as I am to do just what I am doing."

The friendship developed through the natural talk of Dr. Hodgson to such a degree that Bennie even forgot that they were not " on the same side : "

" *B.* Such fun as Roble and I used to have you never saw.

" *Dr. H.* Yes, I used to have jolly times myself, Bennie, when I was a young fellow.

" *B.* Did you, did you have a brother like mine ?

" *Dr. H.* I have a brother about seven years younger than myself. One of my chums when I was your age was my cousin Fred. Ask Rector to introduce him to you, and he can tell you about some of the fun we used to have.

" *B.* Well I will, that will be fine for me. He perhaps can help me. Well I am awfully glad I know you. I love music dearly, do you ?

"*Dr. H.* Yes, I used to play the violin.
"*B.* Oh yes jolly. King of instruments.
"*Dr. H.* Yes.
"*B.* Well, we have great music here I tell you, can you hear it at all?
"*Dr. H.* No, my senses are too shut in.
"*B.* Well, that is too bad, can I do anything for you?
"*Dr. H.* I fear not, thank you. I must wait till I get to your side.
"*B.* Oh yes well that will be all right then won't it. Yes. Well, I begin to understand better, I think. You are in the body. That is it. All right. Now let me tell you all I can before I get too weak."

At the close of the sitting Bennie asked: "What is your real name if you do not mind telling me before I get too far away." It appeared a little difficult for him to catch it, but at last he succeeded. "H O D G S O N," he spelt out. "Good, I won't forget it," he finished the sitting.

At a later seance Dr. Hodgson read aloud to Bennie letters from Mr. and Mrs. Junot. His excitement was touching. "Do you wonder I am happy?" he asked when Dr. Hodgson finished reading the letter from the father. "A most worthy lad," Rector said about him a little afterwards when he had gone away. Later he returned and explained some matter to Dr. Hodgson, to which the latter replied: "Yes, I understand." This gained him the most unfeigned appreciation on the part of Bennie:

"*B.* Well that is good. You must be pretty bright, I think. Did you ever teach school?
"*Dr. H.* Yes, I have taught.
"*B.* I thought so. Did you like Algebra?
"*Dr. H.* Yes, I did.
"*B.* I am glad to know it. I didn't."

It is really as if it were a boy fresh from college speaking.

Neither did Bennie forget Dr. Hodgson's recommendation of the cousin Fred with whom he used to have so much fun. At a seance by another sitter a fortnight

later he appeared for a moment, George Pelham acting as secretary, and said among other things :

" *B.* I saw Mr. Hyde and I like him mighty well . . he is a very bright fellow and has been helping me in many ways.
" *Dr. H.* Oh, you mean my cousin Fred.
" *B.* Yes he is your cousin Fred and the gentleman who is speaking for me [G. P.] helped me to find him."

Noteworthy is Bennie's correct mention of Dr. Hodgson's cousin as " Mr. Hyde " ; he does not call strangers by their Christian names. George Pelham's name, however, appears to confuse him a little ; he says " Mr. George," and once " George somebody " (" George somebody is very good to us here "). One might conceive that it was the circumstance of his having the pseudonym Pelham besides his real name which embarrassed him. About Rector he once says : " the man they call Rector, but he isn't Rector at all, he is somebody else." On asking for Dr. Hodgson's name he said : " What is your *real* name if you do not mind telling me," as if he were accustomed to people being called by pseudonyms. There is an inner unity in all this which is very realistic.

. . . . . .

At the parents' sittings in the third year, 1901, it is as if it were a somewhat more serious and grown-up Bennie speaking. He is very anxious to reply to their questions in a satisfactory manner, and altogether thinks more about others than about himself. When the father on being asked had admitted that they felt it was difficult for him to remember names, he answered very earnestly :

" Well that is so. But I have hunted for you ever since I left the body and I said if I could reach you in any way I would do so, and here I am if I am imperfect."

And on the morrow he said to his mother :

" *B.* Several times I was too weak to answer for you before.
" *Mrs. J.* Yes.
" *B.* Will you forgive my blunders and see me as I am when I am not trying to whisper to you dear.

" *Mrs. J.* Yes, Bennie, I think you do very well.
" *B.* But I try and that is all I can do dear —— "

As Mrs. Junot had asked why his grandmother never came to them at the sittings, he answered penitently :

" But she has dear, only I fear I am a little greedy and take up all the light dear mother, but I do not mean to."

At a later point, in 1902, Bennie had conquered this selfishness. His uncle Frank Clarke had during an absence of his spoken with Mr. Junot, and when Bennie returned, he said :

" Father, you realize I know the desire on the part of Uncle F to meet you again. That is why I left so suddenly."

Immediately afterwards he gave his place up to another communicator.

A kind of test that played a great part at the sittings consisted in Bennie displaying his knowledge of the doings of his family. Among other things he had several times given veridical statements respecting their visits to his grave—" the place where they laid my body," he once called it. At a sitting in 1902 he said that he had seen his father there, and Mr. Junot asked if he also heard what he said. Bennie replied :

" Bennie, these are for you dear, and something else —— I heard it quite clearly, tell Mr. H[odgson] you said, something about Doctor, I think tell Doctor this."

The father had, standing by the grave, said aloud : " Dear Bennie, these flowers are for you. We have not forgotten you. Go and tell Dr. Hodgson this." Bennie did not seem to realize that Hodgson and " Doctor " was the same person. He mentions him also later as *Mr.* Hodgson.

At the same sitting, in February, 1902, Mr. Junot asked a question that led to a most interesting result. He had had a negro coachman named Hugh Irving, who lived with the family through the whole of Bennie's life. He was discharged on account of drinking in August, 1901, and died two months later of an unsuspected cancer, which

appears to have been the cause of his taking to drink. When he left the Junots he took with him a dog named Rounder, the loss of which worried Mr. Junot very much. So, when he came to Boston next time, he asked Bennie about him:

"*Mr. J.* Bennie, do you know where Hugh is now?
"*B.* Oh yes I have seen him several times. What did he go for?
"*Mr. J.* Bennie, tell Hugh that we want the dog Rounder back.
"*B.* I will sure and if you will wait for me a moment I will attend to it now and you shall have him sure.
"*Mr. J.* Good ——
"*B.* See if I don't. Wait a moment and in a few days you shall have him. I'll prove it dad."

Later Rector said that Bennie had gone away for a moment. When he returned, he said:

"*B.* Yes, father are you still here?
"*Mr. J.* Yes.
"*B.* You shall have him right away —— They will give him back to you, he told me so and when I go out again I'll ask him all about where he is —— You will have him sure. This is my test to you dear father."

Afterwards Hugh himself appeared. He told that he had lost Rounder, but promised to find him and send him back. The next day the Junots had their last sitting for that time, and then returned to their home. But on April 2nd, 1902, Dr. Hodgson being alone, the following scene occurred while Mrs. Piper was in the waking-stage:

"*Mrs. P.* John Welsh has Rounder.
"*Dr. H.* John Welsh was round her?
"*Mrs. P.* John Welsh has Rounder Tell this . . tell . . tell . . tell . . John Welsh has Rounder.
"*Dr. H.* John Welsh *is* round her?
"*Mrs. P.* has . . has . . It's I, Bennie, don't you see me? I, Bennie.
"*Dr. H.* John Welsh has Rounder. Yes, I understand.
"*B.* Tell Dad."

When Mr. Junot got this message, he set about finding John Welsh, but without success. In the process, how-

ever, he found the dog in the hands of another man and recovered him. John Welsh he could not trace, but at last, in June, 1902, it occurred to him to ask the deputy sheriff, and from him he learned that a neighbouring working man, a great friend of Hugh Irving's and commonly known as " Old Happy," was registered to vote as John Walsh. At Mr. Junot's request the sheriff visited this man and asked him about the dog. He quickly became suspicious and would not answer, saying : " What are you asking about the dog for ? They have got him back." Thus, it is very probable that he had really had something to do with Rounder. The mention of him in Mrs. Piper's trance by a name which was almost known to nobody, in connection with the dog that had been taken away by his friend, is one of the circumstances that it is most difficult to account for, either by mind-reading or by clairvoyance.

The remaining sittings occupy as much space in the report as the preceding ones, but it must suffice to quote a fragment here and there in order to follow Bennie as far as the editor has made it possible.

November, 1902.

Bennie arrives to beg Dr. Hodgson to take a message to his father, and says afterwards :

" *B.* You have been so kind to me always I feel as though I had always known you.
" *Dr. H.* I feel as if you were an old friend.
" *B.* Well, I think I am."

February, 1903.

Bennie had talked to his father about his friend Dwight, and asks : " Does he know I am alive, or any [of] the rest of the boys ? " It was not the first time that he showed his anxiety to make his friends know that he was not really dead. Above all, however, he thought of his brother and sister, in whose progress and welfare he took a deep interest :

"*B.* Dad Roble is doing finely again —— he takes to his work like a soldier and is looking forward to getting through. Father he appreciates all only you give him time dear he is all right.

"*Mr. J.* Bennie, tell me about yourself.

"*B.* About myself dear. Well dad I am progressing all the time. I am very happy helping others, learning all I can about this life and the philosophy of life in the body before we enter this. I look over my life in the body and wonder what I could have done more for you and mother dear. I wonder if you understand all I feel for you both.——

"Dad do you want me to give you some more tests ?

"*Mr. J.* Surely, if you can.

"*B.* —— I'll think up some things and tell you next time.—— Now let me tell you one thing. Don't question the right and wrong of my returning because there are no wrongs in it.

"*Mrs. J.* Yes Bennie, it gave us a little anxiety as to whether we were doing right in calling you to us.

"*B.* I heard it all and it made me uneasy dear so thought I would settle it for you."

His parents had on the evening before held a long conversation on this subject.

In the following winter Bennie told Dr. Hodgson several things about the doings of his brother and sister. He had seen Roble try on a new suit, and to his great amusement seen him paint his straw-hat green. Helen photographed the pony, and she had got a red coat which did not quite please Bennie. All this turned out to be correct, except that Helen's coat was not red, but blue with red lining. Bennie, however, knew well that he was not infallible. "I may make some few mistakes, I do not claim to do otherwise when I see so much." On an earlier occasion he had said: "Objects sometimes seem quite clear, then again they seem to lose their shape completely."

February, 1904.

"*Roble.* Bennie, do you remember now how your old runabout was broken ?

"*B.* Surely I do & told you I would come here some day and tell him [hand points to Dr. Hodgson] just how it happened. Then you can't say I got it out of your mind see . . .

"*R.* Yes, I understand.
"*B.* George is always talking about this to me."

That George Pelham is very kind to the boy Bennie appears from a little conversation with Dr. Hodgson at a time when the latter was alone:

"*B.* Here is George perhaps you would better greet him too.
"*Dr. H.* Yes, George, very grateful for all your help.
"*G. P.* Just say good morning, that will do. You know I understand. It is only to please the boy."

June, 1904.

On this occasion both Helen and Roble had come to Boston with their mother. Bennie talked to his sister about his old horse that had "kicked up a good deal":

"*H.* Yes he was very mean last summer.
"*B.* Very what Helen?
"*H.* Mean.
"*B.* Do you mean that . . .
"*H.* He was ugly, and my driving worried him.
"*B.* Oh yes. I understand what you mean. But he is getting old —— When I saw Helen it brought it all back to my mind because I wanted her to have my horse."

The few sentences convey a vivid impression of Bennie's affectionate mind, which even embraces his old horse that five years previously he had been so anxious to leave with his sister and not with strangers.

October, 1904.

"*B.* Dear Mr. Hodgson. I am glad to greet you. Please tell my dear ones in the earthly world that I am still with and watching over them. When I can conveniently do so I shall tell about some of their doings since we last met. Do you hear me?
"*Dr. H.* Yes, Bennie. I have a letter from your father [reads it aloud].
"*B.* I am delighted. Thank you. Now cannot you help me by corroborating all that I have previously mentioned that was clear? it will enable me to avoid repetition."

Bennie speaks in a very grown-up manner on this occasion. Likewise, he talked most seriously with his parents when he met them the next time.

February, 1905.

"*B.* I heard you talking about my going a long way from you, not so dad, I am growing all the time in knowledge of this new life, but not that I shall leave you . . .

"*Mrs. J.* No, but, Bennie, in your thought to care for us, you must not do anything to prevent your own progress.

"*B.* No, how could I, dear mother? there are laws connected with this life and its conditions which enable me to progress constantly, yet while progressing I am better able to, if possible, to help you than otherwise."

But he can also speak of things that amuse him. The following episode is rather curious:

"*B.* Tell me who the fellow was in Roble's room last night.

"*Mrs. J.* I shall ask.

"*B.* Such fun I never heard. He was playing on a banjo. He and another fellow were there together playing and one sang something like Dellia.

"*Dr. H.* Delia? Delia?

"*Mrs. J.* Bennie, perhaps you mean Burdelia, Budelia? It is a song that the boys sing.

"*B.* Yes I think so. Say it again it sounded so queer to me.

"*Mr. J.* It's Obedelia.

"*B.* I heard O I heard steel *ing* I heard Della I heard Roble laughing merrily. He and . . do you know Bert?"

A few months afterwards Bennie was alone with Dr. Hodgson and reverted to the funny song.

May, 1905.

"*B.* Good morning Mr. Hodgson will you give my love to all at my home and ask about the evening I heard that song.

"*Dr. H.* The boy or young fellow with Roble did sing that song about Bedelia, and so on. I forget just how it goes.

"*B.* Well I heard him and I heard him say something about stealing her . . .

"*Dr. H.* Yes, I think that's right.

"*B.* Well it was so queer to me I laughed and laughed to hear him say it ——"

Roble Junot states that he and his friend Bert had very often sung the song "O, Bedelia, I've made up my mind to steal you," together, but not on the evening

mentioned by Bennie. On that night he was with a party of young people, and they played the piano and sang, but did not sing *Bedelia*. Bennie thus appears to have confounded different recollections, or rather to have been mistaken with regard to the time when he said "last night."

In November, 1905, the Junots for the last time met Bennie in the presence of Dr. Hodgson. One of the last things he said to them was the following: "When you are called to this beautiful world I shall be the first to greet and help you—I can only give you glimpses of what it really is, but I am glad to do even this." Bennie is right when he says that it is only glimpses he has been able to give of the world in which he appears to live; it does not seem possible to make it conceivable to earthly people. When once Mr. Junot replied to a statement by the son about something referring to the latter's own life: "All right, I understand," Bennie answered, no doubt with good reason: "Well, I am not sure that you do." As, moreover, everything of that kind is unverifiable, I have left it out as far as possible. In one respect only it is possible to test the value of statements about "the beyond," namely, when Bennie speaks of the departed whom he meets, either those who have preceded him, or those who have died after his own demise. Of this may the same be said as of his statements about his own earthly existence, or about the things he pretends to see occurring on earth after his death. On the whole, they agree with facts, and the occasional mistakes are easily accounted for through the circumstances attending the communications.

To Bennie himself the words seem to fit which Dr. Hodgson wrote about George Pelham; what there was of change was not a change of disintegration, but of evolution and growth.

CHAPTER XVI

THE HODGSON-CONTROL

As fate would have it, the next communicator of consequence who purported to communicate in the Piper-trance was Dr. Hodgson himself.[1] As previously mentioned, he died suddenly in Boston on December 20th, 1905. On December 28th a Hodgson-control already manifested through Mrs. Piper, and in the next time hardly any sitting passed entirely without him. In the beginning he spoke only a few words every time, but by degrees he seemed to grow stronger, and made, as formerly George Pelham, a convincing impression upon most of his surviving friends.

But among these were also some of the most sceptical psychic researchers, as Professor James and Professor Newbold. And there was with regard to the Hodgson-control the special ground for scepticism that the medium had known the living Hodgson, and during a long series of years seen him constantly. It would therefore seem that she had special qualifications for personifying him ; one could never with regard to the evidential information produced by him feel entirely secured against the possibility that he might have told it to her during their intercourse. It is true that the latter thing was thought very improbable ; the medium and the experimenter had only used to pass a few moments together before the trance began, and Dr. Hodgson had not at all been on terms of intimacy with Mrs. Piper ; on the contrary, he seems to have adopted a purely business tone with her. More to the point, perhaps, was the contention that she might

[1] Report on Mrs. Piper's Hodgson-control, by Professor William James, *Proceedings* S.P.R., Vol. XXIII., pp. 2—121.

know him subconsciously from his demeanour during the trance and from his numerous conversations with the communicators. The possibilities of this were wide-ranging. To quote Professor Hyslop[1]: "The scientific man will attach less value to what purports to come from Dr. Hodgson through Mrs. Piper than if it came from some one else."

But how right this may be in the abstract, it will hardly in the individual cases be difficult to decide whether there is any probability of the normal Mrs. Piper having been told about the matter in question by Dr. Hodgson. The same, of course, applies to his utterances to the trance-personalities. A few things he is known to have talked about to Rector, etc., but with regard to the greater part of the statements given after his death this must be considered quite out of the question. Besides, such an application of casual knowledge would not at all agree with the usual proceedings in the Piper-trance, where there is rarely made use of anything but what the drama requires. Nay, matters which are well known to Mrs. Piper, the trance-personalities may seem ignorant of. For instance, the Hodgson-control made a mistake with regard to the name of the lady who assisted Dr. Hodgson in his office, and did not, when some time had elapsed, remember that of the street where he had lived, though Mrs. Piper knew both things very well.

As to the characterization given of Dr. Hodgson through the trance-communications, the medium's knowledge of his personality might sooner be considered a ground for scepticism. At the same time, it must be questioned whether a knowledge of him as manager of the sittings could be of much use when he ought to be presented in his relations with his friends. Towards these he had been both gay and full of feeling, and had in return been much valued and loved by them. That his relations with Mrs. Piper were not very cordial appears from the circumstance that she was at one time disposed to break off the connec-

[1] *Journal* Am. S.P.R., Vol. I., p. 106.

tion altogether. After all, the art of transforming Dr. Hodgson as she knew him was perhaps—if it *were* art —not smaller than to create Bennie and Mr. Hyslop and George Pelham on the basis not of her own but of other people's knowledge about them.

The first persons who had sittings with Mrs. Piper in the hope of finding Dr. Hodgson were some of his women friends. One of them was so overcome by the first meeting with him that she fainted after the sitting had finished. Professor James says about his first appearances that they were " characteristic enough in manner, however incomplete." Hodgson was very lively, though somewhat worried by the difficulties of communication, which were greater than he had expected. Respecting this he says in January, 1906 :

" I am Hodgson . . . I heard you call — I know you — you are Miss Pope. Piper instrument. I am happy exceedingly difficult to come, very. I understand why Myers came seldom. I must leave —— "

And on another occasion :

" Remember, every communication must have the human element. I understand better now why I had so little from Myers."

As an instance of his conversation may be quoted the following from a sitting on January 30th. The sitter, Mrs. M., said :

" *Mrs. M.* Do you remember our last talk together, at N., and how in coming home we talked about the work ?
" *R. H.* Yes, yes.
" *Mrs. M.* And I said if we had a hundred thousand dollars—
" *R. H.* Buying Billy ! !
" *Mrs. M.* Yes, Dick, that was it — ' buying Billy.'
" *R. H.* Buying only Billy ?
" *Mrs. M.* Oh no—I wanted Schiller too. How well you remember."

Mrs. M., before Dr. Hodgson's death, had had dreams of extending the operations of the American branch of the Society for Psychical Research by getting an endow-

ment and possibly inducing Professor Newbold (Billy) and Dr. Schiller to co-operate.

A few months later Professor Hyslop had sittings, where Hodgson manifested and at great length discussed their common work and the plans that were cut short by his death. As an instance, the following conversation on April 25th[1] may serve; it has a special interest because Professor Hyslop knew nothing about the matter which the communicator alluded to:

"*R. H.* Do you remember a man we heard of in—No, in Washington, and what I said about trying to see him?
"*Prof. H.* What man was that?
"*R. H.* A light.
"*Prof. H.* A real light?
"*R. H.* Yes, I heard of him just before I came over. Perhaps I did not write you about this."

Dr. Hodgson had not written about any such discovery. But in June, 1906, Professor Hyslop was in Washington, and accidentally met a gentleman who mentioned that he had written to Dr. Hodgson a short time before his death about a man there who showed signs of mediumistic powers.

From a sitting that Professor James held on May 21st, 1906, may be chosen the following small episode which at the time impressed the sitter much, though he adds that Mrs. Piper *might* have heard the anecdote:

"*R. H.* Do you remember—what is that name, Elizabeth Putnam? She came and put her hands over my eyes and said 'who is it?' I said 'well it feels like El. Putnam, but it sounds like—'
"*Prof. J.* I know who you mean.
"*R. H.* Do you realize how difficult it is?
"*Prof. J.* Yet you were just at the point of saying it.
'*R. H.* Dr. — not Putnam — Dr. Bowditch!
"*Prof. J.* That is it.
"*R. H.* Sounds like Dr. Bowditch."

Dr. Hodgson, though, had of course said the reverse of what is told here, namely "it *feels* like Dr. Bowditch," a gentleman who weighed nearly 200lbs. Besides, the

[1] Reported in *Journal* Am. S.P.R., Vol. I., p. 106.

little girl's name was not Elizabeth, but *Martha* Putnam ; when Professor James objected that the first name was wrong, Hodgson attempted " Annie—Mary—Mamie," and finished by saying : " Well, it has gone from me at the moment. That is less important than the thing itself," a remark which it is not difficult to subscribe to.

In a series of sittings by Mr. George B. Dorr, Hodgson gave a detailed and in every respect characteristic description of his visits at the sitter's place, " Oldfarm." Here Mrs. Piper's possible knowledge of Dr. Hodgson's experiences seemed a too extravagant assumption, and the reporter can as alternative to the spirit theory only suggest that of reading of Mr. Dorr's mind.

But the most interesting sittings from Professor James's report are probably those by Professor Newbold. Here Hodgson, among other things, reverts to his favourite subject, psychical research, and his former discussions on it with the sitter. For instance, on July 7th, 1906 :

" *R. H.* You said you could not understand why so many mistakes were made, and I talked you blind, trying to explain my ideas of it —— You laughed about the ungrammatical expressions and said, why in the world do they use bad grammar ?

" *Prof. N.* Yes Dick, I said that.

" *R. H.* I went into a long explanation and attributed it to the registering of the machine. You were rather amused —— I find now difficulties such as a blind man would experience in trying to find his hat. And I am not wholly conscious of my own utterances because they come out automatically, impressed upon the machine —— I impress my thoughts on the machine which registers them at random —— I understand so much better the *modus operandi* than I did when I was in your world."

Later in the same sitting Hodgson reminded Professor Newbold of some experiences which the latter, however, did not recollect. Which of them was right can hardly be decided. The characteristic point is that Hodgson, in spite of all denials on the part of the other, clung to his opinion. At last he said :

" I find my memory no worse than yours in spite of the fact that I have passed through the transition stage—state.

You would be a pretty poor philosopher if you were to forget your subject as you seem to forget some of those little memories which I recall, Billy ! "

It cannot be denied that the deportment of this communicator is somewhat more superior when the sitter will not bow to his opinion than that of poor Phinuit when he was unable to satisfy the inquirers. In a corresponding tone of language he spoke later, after Mrs. Piper's sojurn in England, about the English investigators, Sir Oliver Lodge and Mr. Piddington. A friend of Dr. Hodgson's, Miss Bergman, had a sitting on January 1st, 1908, at which, among other things, she asked Hodgson whether he knew that she had been at his lodgings. It was after the death of Dr. Hodgson that she had been there, but the communicator naturally believed that she referred to a visit during his life-time. So he asked whether they had had tea together or whether she had visited him to read something ? When he at last was informed of the real facts, he exclaimed: " Capital, that is good. Lodge and Piddington consider it good when I don't remember what did not happen ! " The irony of this is not bad.

That Hodgson, like Bennie and other communicators, is represented with the faculty of peering down to the living appears, for instance, from a passage from the conversation with Professor Newbold:

" *R. H.* I heard you and William discussing me, and I stood not one inch behind you.
" *Prof. N.* William who ?
" *R. H.* James. He said he was baffled but he felt it was I talking — at one moment — then at another he did not know what to think. He said I was very secretive and careful.
" *Prof. N.* I don't remember his saying so."

Professor James writes, " I remember it," and states that the above is a perfectly true description of his conversation with Professor Newbold after his sitting with Mrs. Piper on June 27th, 1906.

It is hardly necessary to quote more from the communications from Hodgson to obtain an impression of Mrs. Piper's reproduction of him. There were things that disappointed the experimenters; the communicator did not try to give them the key of a cypher employed by Dr. Hodgson, and he did not seem to recognize some English friends who were introduced at sittings while Mrs. Piper was in London. But these and similar deficiencies can hardly alter the value of the positive results that were obtained. The latter are in his case, as in that of the other communicators, a phenomenon which, explicable or inexplicable, does not cease to exist because other things call for criticism. Hence, I have in the preceding review dwelt especially on the positive matter. Only if it be possible to make the whole fall into unity by elucidating the good results through the bad ones, it becomes a necessity to omit nothing. Such was the case with regard to the automatic writings of Mrs. Verrall and Mrs. Holland, which when they were looked at as a whole proved to be wholly due to the automatists themselves, or to their supernormal impressions about living people. A similar unity of conception is unattainable in the Piper case. In whatever way the deficiencies and the improbabilities of the communications be conceived, there will always remain large quantities which cannot be explained away by referring to them. To present an idea of the nature of those quantities has been the object of the preceding extracts.

SECTION VI

Mrs. Piper's Mediumism. III. Experiments

CHAPTER XVII

CROSS-CORRESPONDENCES

In the autumn of 1906 Mrs. Piper, by arrangement with the Society for Psychical Research, for the second time set out for England. In November and in the beginning of December a series of sittings were held at the house of Sir Oliver Lodge at Edgbaston, near Birmingham, under his own direction. Afterwards the medium came to London, where the experiments were directed by Mr. Piddington during three months, and afterwards by Mrs. Sidgwick until May 8th, 1907. A few sittings by Sir Oliver Lodge ended the medium's sojourn in England.

The sittings which will be mentioned below were devoted to experiments, and are for the greater part reported by Mr. Piddington in his paper, "A Series of Concordant Automatisms."[1] They are, apart from the results of the experiments, of a special interest because a principal part in them was played by Myers, who had otherwise very seldom manifested through Mrs. Piper. According to Hodgson's statements in January, 1906, it seems to have been the difficulties of communication that kept him back. It has, at any rate, a dramatic fitness that it was the death of Dr. Hodgson which apparently caused a change, so that he was henceforth eager enough to assist in the work. Hodgson's own anxiety to secure his co-operation appears from the following utterance to

[1] *Proceedings* S.P.R., Vol. XXII., pp. 19—416.

Sir Oliver Lodge at the latter's last sitting before Mrs. Piper went up to London [1]:

"Myers has had very little opportunity or encouragement to prove his identity —— it should be given him in any case, as he is intelligent, clear, and understands the necessity of so doing."

Sir Oliver Lodge had been much taken up with other communicators, especially his late friend and neighbour, Isaac Thompson, whose family was anxious to communicate with him. He himself admits that he had neglected Myers. Any great respect for the alleged discarnate the experimenters cannot be said to display. At a later sitting Mr. Piddington interrupted Myers in an important matter to inform him that a sitter—who had nothing to do with their experiment—had arrived. "Do I understand that I am to go?" Myers asked, with evident surprise, though with his usual gentleness. In a very different tone had George Pelham on a similar occasion exclaimed: "Sorry to be put out in that way, Vance, but I suppose I shall have to swallow it." The informal way in which the communicators were treated affords us at any rate an opportunity to admire the manner in which their reaction by the treatment is characterized.

In London, however, Myers got plenty to do; the experimenters here were, if anything, prone to overwork him. The main object they had proposed to themselves was to obtain cross-correspondences, or mutually corresponding things, through the different psychics. They were, as we know, inclined to believe that Frederic Myers had for a long time produced such correspondences in the automatic writings of Mrs. Verrall and Mrs. Holland. They intended now to make the Piper-Myers undertake definite tasks in the same direction, and then to watch the eventual results in the different scripts.

Both Myers and Hodgson were very willing to try such experiments. But nothing indicates that Myers had

[1] "Report on Some Trance Communications," by Sir Oliver Lodge, *Proceedings* S.P.R., Vol. XXIII., pp. 246 *seq.*

tried them before. On a certain occasion, on the contrary, he expressed some distrust with respect to their evidential value. Mr. Piddington had spoken of the importance the investigators attached to them. Myers could not understand why they did so; for, said he, "if you establish telepathic messages, you will doubtless attribute all such [*i.e.*, cross-correspondences] to thoughts from those living in the mortal body." Mr. Piddington, however, had a special reason for praising the cross-correspondences; he had in a "message," composed in Latin, asked Myers to produce a kind of *complementary* correspondence, and intended by his utterances in favour of the simple ones to protect the contents of this message which Myers had not yet shown symptoms of understanding. Myers seems to have accepted his opinion; at any rate, he displayed immediately afterwards an increased eagerness to produce cross-correspondences. "Myers is specially interested in taking messages," said Rector a few days after his above conversation with Mr. Piddington. But his very rational remark during that conversation proves both that the cross-correspondences were no invention of his, and that he had no notion of the complementary ones. Rightly it has been argued that the Myers who spoke in such a way could not be identical with the personality that had inspired Mrs. Verrall's and Mrs. Holland's writings during the preceding years.

This, however, cannot influence our conception of the Piper-Myers, as we found no cause to assume that the so-called cross-correspondences in Mrs. Verrall's and Mrs. Holland's scripts were other than impressions which one of them obtained about the other. Apart from Dr. Hodgson's attempt with the "pass-word" *stabdelta* which, at any rate, left traces in Mrs. Verrall's script, the phenomenon in fact did not begin until Mrs. Piper's sojourn in England in 1906—7. It is on the performances from that time that the judgment of its signification must be based.

The first attempt at these experiments was made at one of Sir Oliver Lodge's earliest sittings, on November 15th, 1906.[1] Mr. Piddington had, as said before, been in Boston in the spring of that year in consequence of Dr. Hodgson's death. He had then had sittings with Mrs. Piper, and among other things to the Hodgson-control mentioned Mrs. Holland, about whom Dr. Hodgson, living, never knew anything. Thus it is natural that Hodgson immediately thought of this lady as the recipient of a cross-correspondence, while Myers chose Mrs. Verrall.

I quote the dialogue with only a few omissions. After an introduction by Rector first Myers and afterwards Hodgson appeared:

"*M.* Well well Lodge. I am Myers.
"*Sir O.* Glad to see you ——
"*M.* I wish you to remind me of something.
"*Sir O.* What we are anxious to get is correspondence messages between this medium and others.
"*M.* Good. I understand.
"*Sir O.* Well, will you now give one to some one.
"*M.* Very well, give me a message.
"*Sir O.* Suppose you say 'Julius Caesar.' Can you send that?
"*M.* Yes —— spell it [Sir Oliver spells.] —— I will give it her within five minutes.
"*Rector.* He has gone.

"*M.* Here I am I have given your message to Mrs. Verrall, and she will record it in black and white within a few hours.

"*R. H.* Hello Lodge. I am not dead as some might suppose. I am very much alive. Speak to me.
"*Sir O.* Are you interested in the cross-correspondences? Could you send something to other communicators [*i.e.*, automatists]?
"*R. H.* I am very, and think it the very best thing.
"*Sir O.* Could you send one now to one of the mediums?
"*R. H.* I will go to Mrs. Holland.
"*Sir O.* What will you send?
"*R. H.* St. Paul —— I will give it to her at once."

Afterwards he said: "Give my love to Piddington and

[1] *Proceedings* S.P.R., Vol. XXIII., p. 227 *seq.*

tell him I shall try cross messages." On the morrow he announced that " St. Paul " had been given.

Such was the commencement ; the result was not very satisfactory. " Julius Cæsar " did not appear in any automatic script. As to " St. Paul," Mrs. Holland wrote :

December 31st, 1906.
" II Peter I 15 [Moreover I will endeavour that ye may be able after my decease to have these things always in remembrance]."

This was followed by quotations from St. John and St. James, without references, and finally the words : " This is a faithful saying," a phrase which occurs several times in St. Paul's epistles.

Miss Helen Verrall wrote :

January 12th, 1907.
" The name is not right robbing Peter to pay—Paul ? "

February 26th, 1907.
" You have not understood about Paul ask Lodge."

If all this be due to anything but chance, it seems to mean that Mrs. Holland had written Peter instead of Paul, and that an attempt to correct the mistake was given through Miss Verrall's script.

The fate of these first two cross-correspondences was shared by many in the following period. The *Julius Cæsar* experiment is an instance of the numerous cases where a cross-correspondence was agreed upon, nay in the opinion of the communicators accomplished, but where no result appeared in the automatic writings. *St. Paul* is a case where it is impossible to feel sure that the productions are really connected with the announced message. The difficulty of decision is in this and similar cases increased through the long space of time that may elapse between the announcement and the production of the cross-correspondence. That a certain time must pass before a delivered message could be written down, the communicators no doubt seemed to expect. For instance,

Myers said above that he had given "Julius Cæsar" to Mrs. Verrall, and that she would record it within a few hours. This, however, was his first sanguine conception of the matter. On the next day he added: "I have not succeeded in getting it through to Mrs. Verrall, but I will persist." On a later occasion, on June 2nd, 1907, he said, also to Sir Oliver Lodge, about some cross-correspondences: "These I propose to work on until they appear through Mrs. V." It is a mode of expression that recalls Dr. Verrall's experiment, where it had certainly been necessary to work assiduously before anything akin to a result appeared in the script of his wife. The faculty of the communicators to impress the automatists does not seem to differ much from that of the living.

Besides the unsuccessful and the doubtful cross-correspondences there are, however, a number of cases which may be characterized as successful, great enough to make it impossible to ascribe the whole phenomenon to chance. From these I propose to reproduce the clearest and most instructive. The extracts will be made as short as possible, but accessories of special interest must sometimes be cited at length. The cases are given in the chronological order of the first appearance of the cross-word at the Piper-sittings.

Laurel Wreath.

On January 2nd, 1907, Myers said through Mrs. Piper:

"I said wreath to Mrs. Verrall. Wreaths."

Rector added that he felt that the word wreath had been received by Mrs. Verrall. On January 21st this lady was herself present at the sitting with Mrs. Piper, and Rector asked her: "Did you understand about the wreath?" She answered in the negative, and Rector perceived his indiscretion and said two days later to Mr. Piddington: "We are rather sorry we mentioned wreath before her, but we did so inadvertently."

On February 6th Mrs. Verrall wrote automatically as follows :

" Laura ——
" *Apollo's laurel bough* ——
" Laureatus a laurel wreath
" perhaps no more than that [*drawing of laurel wreath*]
" Corona laureata has some meaning here
" with laureate wreath his brow serene was crowned——"

On February 27th Myers said through Mrs. Piper :

" I gave Mrs. Verrall Laurel wreath."

On March 4th he added :

" When I gave Mrs. V. the message about Laurel wreath I purposely said Laurel so as to make the message clear. After having mentioned wreath here, I thought it wiser to add more to it."

A script by Miss Helen Verrall of March 17th is possibly a reflex from that of her mother which she had not seen :

" . . laurel leaves are emblem laurel for the victor's brow."

ARROW.

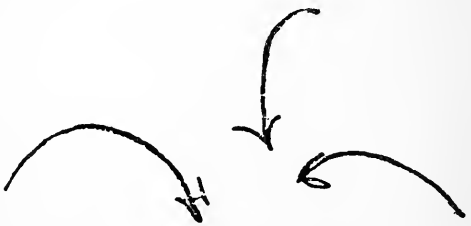
On February 12th, 1907, the following occurred at the Piper sitting :

" *R. H.* Arrow

HODGSON
" *Mr. P.* Will you explain that ?
" *R. H.* I said to Mrs. V —— "

On February 18th Rector said : " Hodgson says do not forget arrow. Watch for it if it comes out."

Mrs. Verrall's script of February 11th had contained the following :



" tria convergentia in unum [three converging to one]."

Perhaps the arrows are a first outcome of Hodgson's attempt, but their number and position as well as the Latin phrase are probably a result of Mrs. Verrall's thoughts being in this period occupied by another experiment, aiming at the co-operation of three mediums.[1] But, at any rate, the following script, of February 18th, seems connected with Hodgson's exertions:

"Do ew. No nor any other
"Can't you take the message? ——
"[*drawing*] it seems to be carvings in stone
"Church architecture or some such thing ——
"Architectonic Architrave
"[*drawing*] a pointed arch
"I can't get rid of the idea A R C H it obsesses me
"There has been great confusion here and I do not think anything has been accurately said
"accurate dicta adcuranda sunt [things said accurately should be attended to]
"But the white arch should give a clue."

On February 19th the following conversation was held at the Piper-sitting between Mr. Piddington and Hodgson:

"*Mr. P.* You said you were going to give arrow to Mrs. Verrall.
"*R. H.* I did certainly say so and I have been there three days trying to impress it upon her, hard. She did get ar I think and stopped there; after that I saw w written I know.
"*Mr. P.* It did seem to me that she was getting near the idea of arrow. Do you know what she did get?
"*R. H.* Not exactly, but Piercing, swift and Piercing came into my own mind while impressing her, and I tried in several ways to make her understand my real meaning. She is the very best subject we have to work with and I believe she can become much more important to us."

The conversation was continued on the morrow in this manner:

"*R. H.* I should like to know if Mrs. V —— understood my message?
"*Mr. P.* I find she did write 'ar.' I can't say anything about the 'w'; it isn't certain.
"*R. H.* I am not absolutely sure myself about this, but she wrote what appeared an M or a W.

[1] See below, p. 315.

"*Mr. P.* Is the first letter an M?

"*R. H.* Yes but my point was to bring out the W. I believe she made it distinct enough to be recognized as a W.

"*Mr. P.* I am going to ask you a question, Hodgson.—— When Mrs. Verrall got the letters '*ar*' she wrote several words beginning with the letters *ar*.

"*R. H.* That makes no special difference to me. My special word to her was arrow A R.

"*Mr. P.* I quite understand, but what I want to know is this: In your attempt to impress 'arrow' did you try to get at it by impressing the actual words which she wrote beginning with *ar*; or are these words the result of Mrs. Verrall's own mind?

"*R. H.* That is what it is. The actual word or point was to make her write arrow.

"*Mr. P.* —— I'll tell you the words in 'ar' which Mrs. Verrall wrote. They were 'arch,' 'architecture,' 'architrave' and 'pointed arch.'

"*R. H.* Pointed was my own word to suggest arrow—— Well suppose I go to her again as soon as I finish here and give her the suggestion again."

On February 25th the subject was once more discussed at the Piper-sitting:

"*R. H.* Got arrow yet?

"*Mr. P.* Well, Hodgson, I don't think the word 'arrow' has been written, but it has certainly been drawn.

"*R. H.* Amen. I spent hours of earthly time trying to make her understand."

The drawing which Mr. Piddington alluded to was that of the three arrows in Mrs. Verrall's script of February 11th. On March 18th, however, her script contained four drawings, of which the last three represent a bow and arrow, an arrow, and a target. They seem to have no connection with the rest of the script, and may then, perhaps, be considered a late result of Hodgson's renewed exertions. Mrs. Verrall knew nothing about his utterances respecting "arrow" in the Piper-trance.

Miss Verrall's script of February 17th had contained the following:

" many together."

As she, like her mother, on February 11th, speaks of *many* arrows, the script in all probability is a reflex of that of Mrs. Verrall.

VIOLETS.

On March 11th, 1907, at one o'clock, Mrs. Piper said in the waking stage :

" Violets. Dr. Hodgson [said] violets."

According to the experience of Mr. Piddington such an utterance alludes to a cross-correspondence. On the same day at eleven a.m. Mrs. Verrall had automatically written as follows :

" With violet buds their heads were crowned
" violaceae odores [scents of violet]
" Violet and olive leaf purple and hoary
" The city of the violet —— "

DIANA.

After Mrs. Sidgwick had undertaken the charge of the Piper-sittings, the following conversation took place on March 19th, 1907 :

" *Rector.* Mr. Hodgson —— wishes to ask if you understand that Mrs. V— has written Dianna.
" *R. H.* Good morning Mrs. Sidgwick I said D I A N N A —— I tried to impress it on her mind.
" *Mrs. S.* Yes, I will inquire.
" *R. H.* . . . Why don't you get her to send you what she does get each day so you can compare it with what I tell you here ? Would not that be wise ?
" *Mrs. S.* She sends it every day to Mr. Piddington, and I tell Mr. Piddington what you say.
" *R. H.* Oh yes, very good."

On April 4th it was Myers who spoke to Mrs. Sidgwick about the cross-correspondence :

" *M.* I should be glad if you could tell me if she wrote about Diana.
" *Mrs. S.* I will inquire. I think she wrote something like it, but not quite Diana.
" *M.* It was that that I was impressing upon her mind."

Mrs. Sidgwick had in mind a script of Mrs. Verrall's of March 13th which spoke about Bacchic revellers and

" Diva the goddess," and, probably as an attempt at the latter, contained the meaningless " Dina." But Mrs. Verrall had in fact produced a script about Diana already on February 27th where she, utilizing reminiscences from Horace, wrote among other things :

" Nemorum custos [guardian of the woods] ——
" Montium custos [guardian of the mountains]
" Dianam tenerae dicite virgines [sing Diana youthful maids]
" I cannot get the meaning clear. I will try again."

Besides, she had on January 1st written the name Diana, but in a connection which made it evident that it was the Christian name of Mrs. Forbes that was meant. On April 29th Mrs. Verrall had herself a sitting with Mrs. Piper, where she referred both to the latter script and to that of February 27th, but not to that about " Diva," which Mrs. Sidgwick had mentioned. Mrs. Sidgwick was not present on this occasion :

" *M.* I referred —— to the word Dianna —— I thought you wrote it. Look that up also.
" *Mrs. V.* I've written the word Diana, I am quite sure.
" *M.* Recently ?
" *Mrs. V.* Some time ago.
" *M.* Yes, I told her [Mrs. Sidgwick] so, but she said no.
" *Mrs. V.* Then she was wrong ; twice I had a reference to her—once a longish time ago to her name and another time to a Latin poem of Diana.
" *M.* Yes I was sure you had understood me and that you had registered it. We must try to do better and she must be sure of what you do write. It is so much easier for me when I say I know that you did get a word for her to understand. Otherwise I keep on trying at the same word again. Therefore you must make it clear to her and vice versa."

It is curious to see the communicator instruct the experimenters as to the best manner of proceeding. Rector, too, had endeavoured to teach Mrs. Sidgwick. At the sitting on April 4th he said to her :

" Will you note friend our messages to and about Mrs. V. and reply to us when we think we have succeeded in getting messages through ? —— We do not wish to make the same things when once they have been received."

The trance-personalities do not seem quite unjustified in their criticism. If the unpractical proceedings were due to the desire of excluding the explanation "telepathy from the sitters," they, at any rate, were not carried through. Mrs. Sidgwick knew Mrs. Verrall's script about "Diva," and Mr. Piddington had, as the experimenter in charge, constantly made himself acquainted with the productions.

Euripides. Spirit and Angel.

On April 8th, 1907, Myers said to Mrs. Sidgwick through Mrs. Piper:

"Do you remember Euripides? —— Do you remember Spirit and Angel? I gave both —— Nearly all the words I have written to-day are with reference to messages I am trying to give through Mrs. V."

Mrs. Verrall had on March 7th produced a long script, containing among other things the words "Hercules Furens" and "Euripides." On March 25th she wrote:

"The Hercules play comes in there and the clue is in the Euripides play, if you could only see it —— "

Furthermore, she wrote on the same day a piece wherein words like *shadow* were constantly repeated:

"Let Piddington know when you get a message about shadow.

———

"The shadow of a shade. That is better umbrarum umbras [shadows of shadows] σκιᾶς εἴδωλον [shadow of a shade] was what I wanted to get written."

The word "Spirit," however, did not appear. On April 3rd she obviously strove for a definite goal, but without obtaining the word "Angel":

"Flaming swords —— wings or feathered wings come in somewhere —— Try pinions of desire The wings of Icarus —— *Lost Paradise regained* —— his flame clad messengers
[*drawing of angel with wings*]
that is better F W H M has sent the message through—at last!"

On April 16th Mrs. Holland produced a piece that seems to reflect Mrs. Verrall's *Euripides* script, what is moreover indicated by the mention of her name Margaret : " Lucus Margaret To fly to find Euripides Philemon." The names Lucus and Philemon come from Browning's version of Euripides' *Hercules Furens*. On inquiry Mrs. Holland answered that she had not read this play ; but she owned the book, and Mr. Piddington points out that she may easily have seen the names by turning over the leaves.

Mrs. Holland's script on March 27th, which was written on the day of the week chosen for experimenting with Mrs. Verrall, is perhaps in a similar way related to the script about *Shadow* :

" —— tenebrae [darkness] —— obscura [dark] —— Sorrow and love — as inevitably as Light and Shadow — Shadow and light —— "

Shadow, at any rate, does not here mean *Spirit* but, like *tenebrae*, darkness, and so cannot have anything to do with the Piper cross-correspondence.

What must above all strike the student on contemplating these cross-correspondences, and provisionally granting that they are what they pretend to be, *viz.*, attempts on the part of the Piper-personalities to produce certain words in the script of Mrs. Verrall, is the extreme difficulty which the task presents. As pointed out before, it is a difficulty comparable with that which Dr. Verrall experienced when he tried to impress his Greek phrase. That the success of the trance-personalities is greater than Dr. Verrall's can at any rate only be said of a number which is small in comparison with that of the attempts ; many more " messages " were planned with apparently no result at all. Besides, the tasks which they proposed to themselves were far easier than Dr. Verrall's. They were aiming at simple words like " Diana " or " Arrow," and generally at one word at a time; even *Laurel wreath* was only chosen because

" wreath " alone had been spoiled by Rector's thoughtless mention of it to Mrs. Verrall. In return, it was the identical word they wanted to produce, not a similar one. Hodgson's remarks on the attempts at *Arrow* are in this respect very instructive. " That makes no special difference to me. My special word to her was arrow," he said to Mr. Piddington when the latter alluded to the other words which Mrs. Verrall had written. There was no question here of anything but " hitting the bull."

This, however, was not always achieved even in the cases where a correspondence is undeniable. In the case of " Spirit " the word was not obtained, in those of " Angel " and " Arrow " it was only the drawings that really expressed the idea. And almost always the word in question was wrapped up in the automatist's own productions in the same manner as Dr. Verrall's Greek words had been. It is interesting to see how a foreign impulse appears to struggle with the matter in the writer's own mind, and how now one and now the other part predominates. " I can't get rid of the idea arch, it obsesses me," Mrs. Verrall writes during her exertions to produce *arrow*. Often it is possible to trace the automatist's subconscious thoughts, which form a chain of more or less evident associations of ideas, and to see how the foreign element intrudes between them. The latter is not linked to the contents of the writer's mind by any association, but may of course become the starting-point for new ideas. At times it is as if the automatist had a feeling of having reached her goal. " Perhaps no more than that," Mrs. Verrall writes after having put down the words *Laurel wreath;* and after the angel has been drawn, the script exclaims triumphantly : " F W H M has sent the message through—at last ! "

On the other hand, it is clear from what has just been said that most of the automatic script is at any rate due to the writers themselves. To this obviously belong the divers remarks about " the clue " (" the clue is in the Euripides play," " the white arch should give a clue "),

which we know from Mrs. Verrall's earlier productions; and the conversations which she frequently holds with herself: "I cannot get the meaning clear"; "Can't you take the message"; "There has been great confusion here and I do not think anything has been accurately said." All this confirms with regard to the greater portion of the script that conception of its character which we had previously attained to. The question that remains is, whether we ought to add the contention that the isolated words which constitute the cross-correspondences originate from an external source that may in a degree be compared to Dr. Verrall in his oft-mentioned experiment.

. . . . . .

Before entering into the discussion of this problem there are, however, a few more cross-correspondences to take into account. The experiments were continued after Mrs. Piper's return to Boston by Mr. George B. Dorr, who, in March—May, 1908, held a large number of sittings with her,[1] and devoted a portion of them to cross-correspondences. The English investigators knew nothing of this while it took place; afterwards the records were sent to England, where Mrs. Verrall read them in October, 1908. Mr. Dorr, on the other hand, did not know the details of the English experiments; he only knew that such had been undertaken. Having, therefore, no model to guide him, he often set the communicators more difficult tasks than they had performed in England. He himself most often proposed the subjects.

The cases are, as before, quoted in the chronological order of the Piper-sittings.

Troy, Joy, and Wreath.

The following conversations took place in March, 1908, between Mr. Dorr and the Piper-personalities:

[1] "Further Experiments with Mrs. Piper in 1908," *Proceedings* S.P.R., Vol. XXIV., pp. 31—200.

March 9th, 1908.

"*R. H.* He [Myers] says Say to our good friend, Troy. Troy. I'll go give that to Mrs. Verrall.

"*Mr. D.* Will you give her the words Exile and Troy? —— Take as synonym for Troy 'the city in flames' —— "

March 16th, 1908.

"*M.* I have given Mrs. V. Troy, Joy.

"*Mr. D.* Why did you write 'joy'?

"*M.* In making her understand T R O Y she misunderstood and wrote Joy.

"*Mr. D.* Did you get 'Troy' through too?

"*M.* Yes she finally got it right, and wrote *Troy*. —— She understood *flames* . . . I gave her my first initials F.M. so she would understand who was writing."

March 23rd, 1908.

"*R. H.* We wrote *wreath* and *Joy*, also *Joy of the Gods*.

"*Mr. D.* Did you do this in any allusive fashion, so far as you can tell?

"*R. H.* No. That is good and by itself, as we wrote archway for P [iddington] in England. Joy was written in the same way —— We wrote it straight out as we did archway long ago."

"Archway" is evidently a mistake for *Arrow*, which cross-correspondence was more than a year old now.

Myers had on March 9th said to Mr. Dorr: "I can't take more to Mrs. Verrall, but I will take a message to Helen Verrall." Later in the same sitting he said: "I shall go and give my messages to Mrs. V. and Helen." Mrs. Verrall's script contained no trace of the above cross-correspondence, but Miss Verrall wrote on April 1st, 1908, the following:

"The pillars of converging fire
The ministers of joy divine —— "

and on April 20th, 1908:

"—— A holly leave or something like that green and prickly a holly wreath Troy Laodamia [1] —— "

[1] *Cf.* Wordsworth, *Laodamia:* "The Beach of Troy," etc.

Exile.

On March 23rd, 1908, Mr. Dorr spoke to Hodgson about the other messages that had been proposed on March 9th.

"*Mr. D.* Did you write 'Exile'?
"*R. H.* Yes, long ago. It came out with Moore. MOORE."

More than a month later, on April 27th, Miss Verrall's script contained the following quotation from Moore:

"A golden harp—the harp that once through Tara's halls ——"

and on May 16th she wrote:

"By the waters of Babylon. The song of exile in a strange land —— The harp that once through Tara's halls ——"

On February 10th, 1909, Mrs. Holland wrote in India a script where allusions to Ireland and to exile appeared together, among several other things [1]:

"St. Bridget's Day—St. Bride —— Oh Bay of Dublin my heart you're troubling — Leave your home behind lad ——"

Prometheus.

On March 31st, 1908, Mr. Dorr suggested "Prometheus" as a message to be taken to the other automatists. On April 7th in the waking stage came the words:

"*Fire*—from careless man— he taught them all his wiles and wisdom.
"Shelley! he taught them all he knew. And they were envious of him—
"Poor Prometheus! What would we have known but for him."

Prometheus was afterwards referred to as a message to be taken with *Fire* and *Art* in several sittings in April and May.

On September 23rd, 1908, Mrs. Verrall, who at that

[1] "Third Report on Mrs. Holland's Script," *Proceedings* S.P.R., Vol. XXV., pp. 218—303.

time had not seen the records of Mr. Dorr's sittings, wrote in Greek as follows :

" In a narthex was hidden the fire by which Prometheus made men like unto gods."

This was followed by English verse containing reminiscences from Æschylus' *Prometheus*. This, the editor adds, is the only mention of Prometheus in 282 scripts by Mrs. Verrall, covering a period of nearly four years.

On December 30th, 1908, Mrs. Holland quoted, with a few alterations, a verse from Shelley's *Prometheus Unbound :*

" Here oh here
We bear the bier
Of the Spectres of many a vanished year
Spectres we
Of the dead time be
We bear Time to his tomb in Eternity."

Meanwhile, Miss Helen Verrall had on November 19th, 1908, written as follows :

" Time's hour glass whose sands never run out—Time and Eternity —— "

Possibly Mrs. Holland's script, which began, " The solemn beat of time swinging through the spheres to Eternity," is a reflex of Miss Verrall's—if it be more than a result of her new-year's sentiments.

Turkeys.

On April 6th, 1908, the following conversation occurred between Mr. Dorr and Hodgson :

" *Mr. D.* Now shall I give you a new message ? It refers to the landing of the Pilgrim Fathers —
' The breaking waves dashed high
On a stern and rock-bound coast.'
Do you understand what ' Pilgrim Fathers ' means ?
" *R. H.* Something about birds or turkeys."

Mr. Dorr did not at once understand this association of ideas. Not until after the sitting it dawned upon him that Hodgson had thought of Thanksgiving Day, which

commemorates the Pilgrim Fathers' first harvest in America, and is always celebrated with turkeys for dinner. He explained, however, what he had in mind, and finished by saying :

"*Mr. D.* Now you understand about the 'breaking waves' and the 'rock-bound coast' —— ?
"*R. H.* Good. I understand well. Breaking waves ? "

On April 22nd Mr. Dorr told Hodgson that he had discovered the association between turkeys and pilgrims :

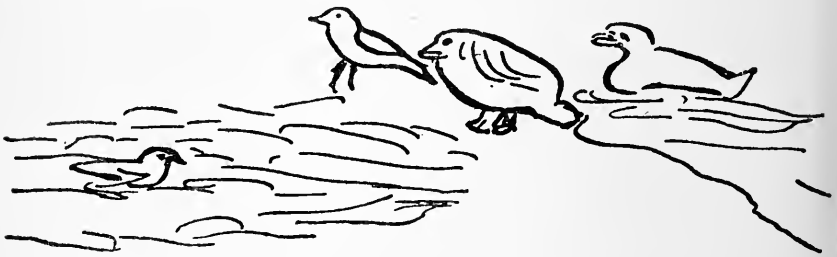
"*R. H.* I could not think of the word [Thanksgiving].
"*Mr. D.* You might add it and turkeys to the message."

On May 4th, Hodgson, on "Thanksgiving" being mentioned, said :

"I said Turkeys and Birds to Mrs. Holland, and Mrs. V. also."

On December 9th, 1908, Mrs. Holland's script contained the following words and drawing :

"Mallard



and a path between —"

Mrs. Holland took this to be a reminiscence from a drinking song which is sung at the celebration of All Souls' Day in All Souls' College in Oxford. Its first verse runs as follows :

"Griffin, Turkey, Bustard, Capon,
Let other hungry mortals gape on,
And on their bones with stomachs fall hard,
But let All Souls men have the mallard."

A connection there must needs be between the script

and Mr. Dorr's experiment; to that the fullness of the impression testifies. In whatever way Mrs. Holland had obtained it, it had called forth not only the "birds and turkeys," but withal the notion of a feast where such creatures were eaten, nay even the picture of the voyage across the waves which Mr. Dorr had associated with the Pilgrim Fathers.

Medusa's Head.

There had at the sitting with Mrs. Piper on April 13th, 1908, been talked about Medusa, and Perseus who cut off her head, and Mr. Dorr had suggested that "Medusa's head" would be a good message to take to the other lights, adding: "Describe it if you can as you have to me, carried through the air and dropping blood." On May 12th the trance-personality wrote that the message had been received by Mrs. Holland, who had written "Blood—Horse—Head, etc." However, it was not until a year later, on May 19th, 1909, that Mrs. Holland wrote the following:

"Pershore—pericarp—Persia—Persens—The Fateful Head —Medusa—The mirrored shield and the winged sandals of swiftness ——"

Shelley's Skylark.

On May 4th, 1908, Mr. Dorr spoke with Myers as follows:

"*Mr. D.* You spoke of Shelley's poem the Skylark the other day; perhaps you could get one of them to quote for you some lines from it.

"*M.* We will impress her [*sic*] to write it."

On May 8th, Mr. Dorr reverted to the question, saying:

"We agreed the other day upon Shelley's poem the Skylark as a message. And you were going to try and make one of the other Lights write some lines from that —— "

In the waking stage on the same day Mrs. Piper said:

"We said Ode, and we said Skylark, and we wrote them. And she drew a bird."

At Mr. Dorr's sittings no more was said about this

experiment. But on December 9th, 1908, Miss Pope had a seance with Mrs. Piper, and asked the communicators to give " a message for England."

Hodgson wrote :

" G.P. has one which I think good. The nightingale has a lyre of gold. Myers and Hodgson with the help and encouragement of G.P. The lark is on the wing. No more, too many may lead to confusion —— We shall get on famously after a while. I saw and helped Mrs. Holland."

Hodgson's humorous announcement of " the lark " seemed to be verified on February 10th, 1909, when Mrs. Holland wrote the lines of Shelley's *Ode to a Skylark :*

" Hail to thee blythe Spirit
Bird thou *never* wert."

Comus.

On May 12th, 1908, Mr. Dorr said to Myers, referring to something he had read to him on May 4th, from Milton's *Comus :*

" I read you ' Sabrina fair, listen where thou art sitting, Under the glassy cool translucent wave.' Perhaps this, as a quotation, may help you to give it to the other Lights."

On December 16th, 1908, Mrs. Holland wrote :

" The glassy cool translucent wave— . . .
I want her to draw a recumbent figure [Sabrina ?] —— "

Lux, Clouds, Arrow.

This case and the following are from the beginning of 1909, when now Miss Pope, and now Mr. Dorr, held sittings with Mrs. Piper. On January 13th Myers, among other things, said to Miss Pope :

" Helen wrote gathering clouds, clouds are gathering in the west and she also wrote Lux [light] —— Then another thing was written. Arrow, light and swift as an arrow —— Then Mrs. Verrall wrote as did Mrs. Holland also clouds before dawn."

Miss Helen Verrall had on November 5th, 1908, written :

" Mist on the high peaks of the mountains at sunrise when the clouds in the valley grow rosy in the growing light. Lucifero radio Phoebus iam diffugat umbras et sub luce nova nova lucent omnia [now Phœbus with light-bearing ray puts to flight the shadows, and beneath the new light all things shine anew]."

And on November 10th :

" The two horns of the moon and between them a cord—thus Diana's shafts speed swiftly—the arrow by day."

Trailing, Rolling Waves. The Voyage.

On March 1st, 1909, the following conversation was held at the Piper-sitting :

" *R. H.* Helen. Trailing Trail Trellis
" *Mr. D.* Is that word trailing ?
" *R. H.* Yes, very good —— Sea Season Rolling Roll Waves. I got these through Helen V."

Later in the sitting Mr. Dorr read to Myers the verse from Tennyson's *The Voyage,* beginning, " For one fair vision," when the hand wrote :

" Wait for this. I have already referred to this particular verse with Helen V."

Miss Verrall had in her script from the preceding months the following :

November 24th, 1908.
" —— a sloping hillside with trailing vines.
December 12th, 1908.
" From the deep the wailing of the waters —— thalassa, thalassa [the sea, the sea].
December 15th, 1908.
" [*In Greek :*] Of the sounding sea.
January 22nd, 1909.
" On the face of the waters—when the deeps are stirred
February 1st, 1909.
" —— The sound of great waters when the bed of ocean rocks
" We know the merry world is round
" And we may sail for evermore."

The two last lines are a quotation from Tennyson's *The Voyage.*

. . . . . .

A retrospective glance at the above cross-correspondences in their entirety will show that they may be divided into two groups—those that had appeared in the script of other automatists before they were mentioned by the Piper-personalities, and those that did not appear in the automatic scripts until a shorter or longer time after they had been mentioned at Mrs. Piper's. To the former group belong almost all experiments performed in England, besides the two last-described correspondences referred to at the sittings in Boston in 1909; Myers or Hodgson asked whether some word had been written, or declared that it had been so, and it turned out that it had in fact appeared in some script. Mr. Dorr's experiments in 1908, on the contrary, fall under the other category. Generally it was himself who proposed the messages; thus, as far as they did appear at all, it must needs be after the mention of them in the Piper-trance.

In judging of the value of the cross-correspondences, it is not, however, without import whether they belong to the former or the latter of these categories. The possibility that the correspondence between a subject talked of at the Piper-sittings, and the script of one of the non-entranced automatists, might be due to supernormal perception on the part of the mediums, is no doubt greater when the mention at the Piper-sittings precedes the script than when it is the reverse. It is especially great in the four cases where it is in Mrs. Holland's script that the correspondence appears. This lady returned to England in the autumn of 1908; in the period of Mr. Dorr's experimenting with Mrs. Piper she had not produced any automatic writing, and during the summer only a single piece. But after a conversation with Miss Johnson on November 24th, 1908, she began once more to write. The result was among other things the four cross-correspondences mentioned above, the two of which were produced in

December, while the next appeared in February and the last one as late as in May, 1909. To all of them it applies that they did not appear until Miss Johnson and Mrs. Verrall had seen the records of Mr. Dorr's experiments. Under these circumstances, much speaks in favour of conceiving Mrs. Holland's script as a reflex only of the knowledge of the other ladies.

Nevertheless, it is difficult to acquiesce in this conception. The four cases are very different from the so-called cross-correspondences between Mrs. Verrall and Mrs. Holland in former years. There is here nothing of the vague similarity which formerly made the researchers believe that it was not the same thing which was impressed on the two automatists, but complementary ones. We have seen how *feast, birds* and "breaking waves" were transmitted in the *Pilgrim Fathers* experiment; the message *Medusa's Head* was likewise reproduced with great completeness. From Shelley's *Skylark*, Mr. Dorr had wanted some lines to be quoted, without specifying which ones; Mrs. Holland quoted two. As regards *Comus*, Mr. Dorr had himself chosen the lines; one of these "Sabrina fair, listen where thou art sitting," was indicated through the words "a recumbent figure," while the other, "Under the glassy cool translucent wave," appeared with the exception of the first word. Neither ought it to be overlooked that it had in three of the said cases—*Turkeys, Medusa*, and *Skylark*—been expressly told in the Piper-trance that it was to Mrs. Holland that the message was sent.

The two cases from 1908, in which the correspondence appears in Miss Helen Verrall's script, present difficulties of another kind. In the former, at any rate, the plan seems to have been that it should appear through Mrs. Verrall, which it did not. More perplexing, however, is the circumstance that the Piper-personalities in both cases seemed to know in what form the message would appear, long before it was produced in any script. "In making her understand Troy she [Mrs. Verrall] misunderstood

and wrote Joy—she finally got it right and wrote Troy," Myers says on March 16th, 1908; both *Joy* and *Troy* appeared through Miss Verrall not long afterwards. About *Exile*, Hodgson says: "It came out with Moore," two months before Miss Verrall wrote: "The song of exile," at the same time quoting Moore's line: "The harp that once through Tara's halls." Here again one would be justified in contending that it is on a supernormal perception of what has occurred at the Piper-sitting that Miss Verrall's script is based. But, on the other hand, the correspondence is in this case, as in that of Mrs. Holland, much greater than is usual when it is due to such impressions. If it be in itself difficult to "hit the bull," it is of course more improbable still that it will happen with two shots at a time, as is here the case both with *Joy-Troy* and with *Exile-Moore*. One feels tempted to appeal to the "explanation" prevision.

With regard to the category of cross-correspondences where the Piper-personalities refer to a message that turns out to have already appeared, the matter stands somewhat differently. Theoretically, it is no doubt possible to urge that Mrs. Piper might as well obtain impressions about the other automatists as *vice-versa*, and in very simple cases like *Violets* and *Euripides* this possibility could hardly be dismissed. But there are cross-correspondences within this category where the case is too complicate to make the explanation satisfactory. Such a one is, for instance, the *Arrow* correspondence. Hodgson contends that he has said "arrow" to Mrs. Verrall, and that at least "ar" has appeared. In reality, Mrs. Verrall has drawn three arrows and, moreover, groped for a word beginning with *ar*. About this Mrs. Piper ought to have obtained not a vague impression, but as clear a knowledge as that which the reader of the records obtains, to be able to utilize it for the fiction that it is Hodgson who has produced it. The *Laurel Wreath* case is no less remarkable. The Piper-personalities tell that they have endeavoured to make

Mrs. Verrall write "wreath"; at that time she has not yet done so, but later she writes "laurel wreath," and they pretend now to have added laurel, because they had inadvertently mentioned wreath. It can hardly be denied that Mrs. Piper, if it be she, understands how to produce exactly the right impression of Mrs. Verrall's script being influenced by the alleged communicators.

But even if the cross-correspondences do not furnish conclusive evidence for the reality of the trance-personalities, but must rank with the other mysteries of Mrs. Piper's trance, they have at least proved very different from those we got to know earlier by the same name. There we found only a reflex from one automatist to the other; apart, perhaps, from *stabdelta*, Dr. Verrall's sentence was the only thing that looked like a result of intentional transmission. But that there had not previously been made any attempt at influencing the automatists from outside does not, of course, preclude the possibility of such attempts being made now. Hodgson says at one of the Piper-sittings in London in 1907 about Mrs. Verrall: "She is the very best subject we have to work with, and I believe she can become much more important to us." The Piper-personalities thus seem to conceive the present experiments as a beginning, and in that at any rate they are right. Whatever they are, they must be judged by themselves, without regard to that which had preceded them in the writings of the English automatists.

. . . . . .

Before leaving the cross-correspondences, it is necessary to mention one which has gained a special reputation, and which perhaps, if it were all that the English researchers have assumed, would be of no small value for the conception of the whole problem. For in that case six different mediums would have been co-operating in one and the same cross-correspondence, aiming at the production of the number *seven*. The assumption, how-

ever, has been sharply attacked by the critics, and no doubt they are right.

The incident is long when all that belongs to it in the opinion of the investigators is included, and without doing this the argument can hardly become satisfactory. The real cross-correspondence occurred in the year 1908, but in 1904 an event had already taken place which is thought to constitute the introduction. I shall begin by this event, and relate the whole case in chronological order.

On July 13th, 1904, Mr. Piddington wrote in the rooms of the Society for Psychical Research in London a letter which he sealed and gave into the custody of Miss Johnson, who without knowing its contents placed it in one of the drawers of the office. The plan was that it should remain unopened till after his death; circumstances, however, led to its being opened in the autumn of 1908. The contents of it were, slightly abridged, the following:

"If I ever am a spirit, and if I can communicate, I shall endeavour to remember to transmit in some form or other the number SEVEN. —— I should try to communicate such things as: 'The seven lamps of architecture,' 'The seven sleepers of Ephesus,' 'unto seventy times seven,' 'we are seven,' and so forth. The reason why I select the word seven is because seven has been a kind of tic with me ever since my early boyhood. I would walk along the street to a rhytm formed by counting 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7 —— I have purposely cultivated this tic —— as I think it likely —— that the memory of it having by practice been frequently revived in my lifetime, may survive the shock of death."

On the same day when Mr. Piddington composed this "posthumous letter" in London, Mrs. Verrall produced in Cambridge a script that among other things contained the following lines:

"It is something contemporary that you are to record—note the hour—in London half the message has come."

This was followed by remarks about the contents of Myers's sealed envelope left with Sir Oliver Lodge, and a statement about a sealed envelope left by Professor

Sidgwick. We have previously seen to what extent Mrs. Verrall's mind was at this period occupied with the thought of Myers's letter, and how this preoccupation led to statements in her script which turned out to disagree with the facts. That under these circumstances she may have got a clairvoyant impression about Mr. Piddington's performance on the same day is not improbable; this kind of supernormal faculty she was often proved to possess. The phrase "half the message" is no doubt due to her usual tendency to expect a complement to her own writing.[1]

Three years after this prelude another episode followed, which the editor includes in the report about the *Sevens*. It seems, however, to get its natural explanation from the circumstance that the automatists, who in this case were Mrs. Verrall and her daughter, had been much occupied with the before-mentioned "Latin message" experiment that was completed in May, 1907, and that aimed at making the Piper-Myers establish a cross-correspondence between three mediums. It was in a special degree Mr. Piddington's experiment, and it is probably to him Miss Verrall alludes in the following script of August 6th, 1907:

"A rainbow in the sky
"fit emblem of our thought
"the sevenfold radiance from a single light
"many in one and one in many
"[*In Latin:*] Doubtless he himself will seem to have transferred this to his own rule. Wherefore whatever is set forth must be co-ordinated, lest, being scattered, it should escape notice ——"

At any rate, it seems certain that the script alludes to cross-correspondences between several mediums. The rainbow is such a familiar symbol of fusion that its choice

[1] Miss Johnson ("Second Report on Mrs. Holland's Script," *Proceedings* S.P.R., Vol. XXIV.) assigns a deeper meaning to the said phrase. The real cross-correspondence which took place in 1908 embraced, in her opinion, besides the sevens also allusions to Dante; Mr. Piddington's sealed letter, therefore, was only "half the message." According to this conception, the cross-correspondence must have been planned four years before its execution!

hardly requires to be explained as an impression from Mr. Piddington, even if his constant occupation with sevens might be considered to influence the ladies of his acquaintance who wrote automatically.

Mrs. Verrall read her daughter's script on August 28th, 1907, and on the same day wrote as follows :

" Significatio patet; symbolum tetigisti [the meaning is obvious; you have touched the symbol]. Test the weakest link [drawing of three links of a chain] the chain still holds. Not ours to teach. You learn alone Place the question in the midst and let each have his test. The same should be said to each—Try this new experiment—Say the same sentence to each of them and see what completion each gives to it. Let Piddington choose a sentence that they do not know and send part to each Then see whether they can complete Or he might give different parts of the same sentence to each of them if the sentence is long enough ——"

It is evident that Mrs. Verrall, at least subconsciously, has taken her daughter's script to refer to Mr. Piddington's experiment ; the drawing of *three* links further indicates that she has the Latin message in mind. The memory of it has set her imagination in motion, and made it in a somewhat confused manner devise plans for similar experiments. To his sealed envelope or the sevens nothing is pointing.

In the spring of 1908, however, began what the investigators consider the real cross-correspondence. Mrs. Verrall's script of April 20th referred to " the seven hills " of Rome ; according to an entry in her diary she herself thought that the reference was due to the circumstance that April 21st is the date of the founding of Rome, a date which had been very familiar to her from her girlhood.

On April 27th her script referred to numbers, though more to threes than to sevens. She wrote as follows :

" [Scrawl] and later too—Do not try to attend

37603
7
6

72

Try again

3	
7	
6	41
	17
13 + 3	361
16	495

" I can't do anything but these figures. They seem to be wanted but I can't tell why."

Miss Helen Verrall's script of April 29th appears to reflect that of her mother :

" The figure 3 that seems wanted "

On May 4th she wrote :

" 8 eight . . . .
Δ a triangle "

On May 8th occurred what is considered to be Mrs. Piper's contribution to the cross-correspondence. At a sitting by Mr. Dorr in Boston she said in the waking stage the following :

" We are seven ——
" I said Clock ! Tick, tick, tick ! Stairs. —— "

Some days afterwards Mr. Dorr asked the communicator about the meaning of this :

" *Mr. D.* The first thing she said was ' We are seven.'
" *C.* That is Wordsworth, but we were seven in the distance as a matter of fact."

Miss Johnson writes that this " rather enigmatic phrase " she takes to mean that seven persons were concerned in the cross-correspondence. I cannot see that it says anything more than that the group of communicators were seven at the particular moment. Together with the remark that the quotation " we are seven " comes from Wordsworth, this statement destroys every foundation for believing that seven referred to a cross-correspondence, let alone that it alluded to its being performed by seven persons.

Further, Miss Johnson laid great stress on Mrs. Piper

having said "Tick, tick, tick!" In Mr. Piddington's sealed letter the word *tic* occurred in the sense of habit. But, as Professor Hyslop[1] has afterwards made clear, Mrs. Piper's *tick*, followed by *stairs*, refers to a clock on the stairs of Dr. Hodgson's "taverna," which had been the subject of the preceding conversation between the communicator and Mr. Dorr.

Meanwhile, Mrs. Verrall had in the days from May 5th—8th, been occupied in reading the last cantos of Dante's *Purgatorio;* on May 8th she composed automatically a poem that was evidently prompted by this reading. On May 10th she wrote the following script, which was afterwards thought to refer to the *Sevens* cross-correspondence:

"I have wanted for some time to tell you of something that will interest you greatly, but it is very important that Helen should know nothing of it. It concerns her more closely than it does you but you will have to wait some time to hear of it. She has got quite a new type of thing in her writing—it is she who will lead this time not you—you only fill in her gaps ——"

But there is in fact nothing in it that points beyond subconscious fabrication. Miss Verrall believed that the "new type of thing" referred to the figures that had appeared in her script; but Mrs. Verrall had herself written figures, even more than her daughter. If the allusion were to the sevens, it was neither correct that Mrs. Verrall would "fill in her gaps," nor that Miss Verrall's script would tarry in appearing. Mrs. Verrall has no share whatever in the following part of the cross-correspondence, and Miss Verrall's script about the sevens appeared already on the day after that of her mother.

The facts of the case seem to be that Mrs. Verrall's reading of *Purgatorio*, especially of Canto XXIX., where the number seven is constantly repeated, has been reflected in the automatic script of her daughter. Miss Verrall, on May 11th, wrote:

"A branching tree not a real tree but emblematical. Scrolls in place of leaves.

[1] *Proceedings* S.P.R., Vol. XXV., p. 298.

" Jacob's ladder and the angels upon it. What does that mean —

" A spinning top many colours but as it spins they are blended into one —

" Mark the simile

" [drawing of branch with seven leaves] a leaf that hangs down like that and a flower small and white I think and a sweet scent, it is a scrub—foreign—not English—Sciola a name like that.

" The seven branched candlestick it is an image—the seven churches but these not churches

" seven candles united in one light

" and seven colours in the rainbow too.

" Many mystic sevens

" all will serve

" we are seven

" Who (?) F. W. H. Myers."

Jacob's ladder is mentioned in the part of *Purgatorio* read by Mrs. Verrall, and appears in her automatic verses of May 8th. But there is also a flower called " Jacob's ladder " which is described in Bentham's *British Flora*, a book familiar to Miss Verrall ; in the illustration of it the number of leaflets shown hanging down is seven. The allusion to it, then, evidently originates from Miss Verrall's own subconscious mind ; neither does the script contain any other thing which she did not know ; the angels upon the ladder, the seven-branched candlestick, and the seven colours in the rainbow, are everyday knowledge. Besides, there is an echo of the preceding year's script about the sevenfold radiance and the rainbow.

Miss Johnson herself leans towards the above opinion, *viz.*, that Miss Verrall's script is due to her mother's pre-occupation with Dante. The same explanation, however, may doubtless be extended to the next link of the cross-correspondence. Mrs. Verrall had a friend, Mrs. Frith, who wrote automatically, and who believed herself to receive communications from Hodgson ; there had been a few indications of supernormal connection between her script and Mrs. Verrall's. Immediately before his death in 1905, Dr. Hodgson had mailed a Christmas card to Mrs. Verrall, containing a quotation from Tennyson's

Ancient Sage, "Climb the Mount of Blessing." In February, 1908, Mrs. Verrall addressed the following question to Mrs. Frith in the hope of getting an answer through her script: "Can R. H. say what are his associations with the words 'Climb the Mount of Blessing'?" No reply was obtained, but on June 11th, a few days after Mrs. Verrall had read her daughter's script about the sevens, and the day after she had told Mr. Piddington about it in a letter, Mrs. Frith automatically wrote a poem, the first and last lines of which run as follows:

> "Then you are drawing nearer to the plane
> The plane of blessing and the promised land
>
> ———
>
> Pisgah is scaled the fair and dewy lawn
> Invites my footsteps till the mystic seven
> Lights up the golden candlestick of dawn."

The first lines are evidently prompted by Mrs. Verrall's question, which was normally known to Mrs. Frith, while she did not know the answer. As she both through this question, and otherwise, was in rapport with Mrs. Verrall, it is quite likely that she may have obtained an impression about the sevens which just at that moment filled Mrs. Verrall's thoughts. That her verse contains allusions to Dante, as Miss Johnson contends, I am unable to see. Both Pisgah—the mountain from whose top Moses saw the Promised Land—and the seven-branched candlestick are well-known Biblical references.

The next contributor to the cross-correspondence was Mrs. Holland. Anterior, however, to her real contribution to it, the following occurred. She was on her way home to England from India, when she, in the night between the 14th and 15th of July, 1908, had a dream, which in a letter to Miss Johnson she described as follows:

"Last night I dreamt that I was in a large bare room—rather like a studio. . . .

"Some one showed me an old note book—or diary—in which was written in a small neat hand:

"'Since in 1872 a dear friend chose as a sign by which to

communicate with me the figure 6, I, in my turn, will try, in the time to come, to send the figure 6,—simply the sign of 6.' "

There is a very curious resemblance between the notebook and its contents in the room like a studio and Mr. Piddington's sealed envelope in the office of the Society, distorted just in the manner in which dreams use to distort things. Possibly the dream was really due to an impression from Mr. Piddington, who on account of Mrs. Verrall's communication about her daughter's sevens, must needs have been led to think more than usually of his " posthumous letter."

On July 23rd Mrs. Holland, who was still at sea, automatically wrote the following script :

" There should be three at least in accord and if possible Seven—The lady and the learned lady and the maiden of the crystal and the scribe and the professed scribe—and the two new comers—what could be better than that ? Take this for token ' Green beyond belief.' —— Not only on the ocean may the Green Ray appear——"

A few days previously, on July 18th, Mrs. Verrall had read Mrs. Frith's script of June 11th, and had been impressed by the similitude between it and her daughter's sevens. Thus it is also in this case probable that the automatist has received a supernormal impression from her ; Mrs. Holland, as we know, had on numerous occasions demonstrated her sensitiveness with regard to such. The plan of an experiment with seven contributors had been intimated already in Miss Verrall's script of 1907, and must, at any rate subconsciously, have existed in her mother's mind. Mrs. Holland took the five of the mediums mentioned by her to be Mrs. Forbes, Mrs. Verrall, Miss Verrall, herself and Mrs. Piper. In the opinion of the investigators, however, there were only six mediums. The seventh contributor to the cross-correspondence was Mr. Piddington.

" Green beyond belief " was, in Mrs. Holland's opinion, due to a phenomenon on the sea which she had been told

of. Miss Johnson interpreted it as an allusion to Dante—the eyes of Beatrice are in *Purgatorio* compared to emeralds.

The last contribution to the *Sevens* cross-correspondence was due to a non-professional trance-medium, Mrs. Home, through whom a "Myers-control" had often purported to speak. Through her the following conversation was on July 24th, 1908, held with Colonel Taylor and one Miss H.:

"*M.* Seven times seven and seventy-seven. Send the burden of my words to others.

"*Miss H.* To whom shall we send?

"*M.* Souls that labour for your earthly wisdom send no names.

"*Miss H.* May we say the message is from a teacher?

"*M.* No . . Several wait to hear. Some say they do not mind the name; others seek only. Omnia vincit.

"*Col. T.* Shall I send this to Miss Johnson, or to Mrs. Verrall?

"*M.* Miss Johnson likes it better; you can help better through her."

The puerility of all this no doubt suffices to characterize it as subconscious fabrication. But the phrase "seven times seven and seventy-seven" just at this point can hardly be dismissed as a casualty. Miss Johnson states that there had been a slight coincidence between an earlier trance-utterance of Mrs. Home's and one of Mrs. Verrall's scripts. Thus it is not improbable that this medium too has received a supernormal impression from the latter, who was at that time so engrossed by the sevens.

From the above representation it appears, among other things, that the contributors to this curious cross-correspondence really were but four. Mrs. Piper has nothing at all to do with the case; but neither does Mrs. Verrall, strictly speaking, belong to it; her script about the seven hills of Rome has no relation to the rest. On the other hand, she is at the bottom of the whole affair as the involuntary cause of the productions of the other ladies. Her reading of *Purgatorio* is reflected in her daughter's script of May 11th, and as soon as she has seen this and told Mr. Piddington of it, Mrs. Frith too

receives an impression about the sevens that emerges in her script of June 11th. This script is read by Mrs. Verrall on July 18th, and on July 23rd and 24th the impression is transmitted to Mrs. Holland and Mrs. Home. Thus, at any rate, it may have happened. Mr. Podmore, who has criticized the *Sevens* case from a similar point of view,[1] assigns a share in the result to Mr. Piddington; on my part I incline to confine his influence to the dream of Mrs. Holland.

The chief reason why the researchers, in spite of numerous improbabilities, ascribed the *Sevens* cross-correspondence to extra-terrestrial influences, was that it seemed too preposterous to assign to a sub-personality, for instance, that of Mrs. Verrall, a plan like that which apparently was at the bottom of it. We have seen, however, that there is no reason whatever to speak about a plan or a design on the part of her nor any other. The marvel of this cross-correspondence is reduced to four separate sensitives having obtained an impression from her in the same supernormal manner in which a single one—Mrs. Forbes, Mrs. Holland, Miss Verrall—had so often done it. With regard to the percipients, the case was of exactly the same nature as otherwise; and as regards "the agent," she was no more a party to it than, for instance, in a former case the friend in Copenhagen from whom Miss Ramsden received an impression. Probably that kind of thing often takes place when people experiment with automatic script and the like, and the special point here is only the circumstances that brought to light the different elements of the incident.

The *Sevens* cross-correspondence had yet an after-play which the recorder interprets in favour of her own conception, but which, if anything, speaks against it. In the middle of January, 1909, Mr. Piddington said half in jest to Mrs. Verrall that "a recent case told rather against spirits." He had in mind his "posthumous letter" and

[1] *The Newer Spiritualism*, pp. 268—76.

its possible influence on the *Sevens* scripts, but did not tell Mrs. Verrall anything about it. He had in the autumn opened the letter and shown its contents to Miss Johnson, but Mrs. Verrall had not been made acquainted with its existence. About a week after her conversation with Mr. Piddington, on January 27th, she automatically wrote as follows :

" —— Nothing is swifter that Thought, nothing more sure—swifter than arrow or than bullet thought flies from mind to mind, instantaneous. It is a now and a now, at once, no pause, no then. Don't you understand ?

" And ask what has been the success of Piddington's last experiment ? Has he found the bits of his famous sentence scattered among you all and does he think that is accident, or started by one of you ? Tell him to look carefully and he will see a great difference between the scripts in this experiment and in the others. That ought to help the theory. One language only has been used this time. But even if the source is human, who carries the thoughts to the receivers ? Ask him that.

" F. W. H. M."

It is evident that Mrs. Verrall, who knew nothing about Mr. Piddington's sevens, had through the conversation with him been led into a wrong track. His remark about the case that " told rather against spirits " had set her mind in motion, and it was now by her automatic self interwoven with the idea in her former script of his dividing a sentence among different mediums. To be sure, the whole is rather meaningless. Formerly it was he who ought to distribute the sentence, now it is asked whether he has found it scattered among them. But this is only one of many instances of the looseness of the subconscious fabrication, which so much resembles that of dreams, and so little satisfies the logical exigencies of the waking reason. With the sevens the script has no connection whatever. The one thing that might apply to that cross-correspondence is the remark that only one language had been used ; but of course it would no less apply to an experiment, like that mentioned in the script, where a single sentence had been parcelled out in bits.

CHAPTER XVIII

OTHER EXPERIMENTS

During Mrs. Piper's sojourn in England in 1906—7 the English researchers had, besides the cross-correspondences, performed a number of other experiments. On the whole, it must be said that they demanded a great deal of the trance-personalities. Perhaps more had been attained through less exacting proceedings; but in return that which was attained is no doubt the more valuable as regards the solution of the question of its origin.

In one respect, however, the proceedings seem due to an erroneous conception on the part of the experimenters. As formerly in the case of George Pelham, they appeared to think that people after death could remember all that they had ever experienced. Perhaps it was the, if not unlimited, yet considerable subliminal faculty of remembrance that was transferred to the discarnate; but nothing, in fact, justified the conception. Supposing that the Piper-communicators were what they claimed to be, their memory was on an average like that of the living. George Pelham could not remember with whom Mr. Howard and himself had once dined in New York, still less how many pages his manuscript contained, but he recollected other and more important things; the same was the case with Hodgson and others. In England Myers was worried with divers inquiries which while living he would hardly have been expected to answer after the lapse of many years. Thus, Mrs. Verrall had come across a letter from Frederic Myers to Dr. Verrall, in which, on account of the latter having called the "Archytas" ode by Horace[1] "positively bad," he

[1] *Carminum*, I., 28.

exclaims: "The first six lines of Archytas have entered as deeply as almost any Horatian passage into my own inner history." This caused Mrs. Verrall to ask the Piper-Myers the following question through Mr. Piddington: "Which ode of Horace entered deeply into your inner life?" The letter was written in 1884. Is it to be wondered at that Myers, if it were he, found it difficult to answer the question twenty-three years later?

Another incident where much was exacted of his memory is of a special import because it shows that the Piper-Myers in 1907 pretended to influence Mrs. Verrall's script also in a case where there was no question of a cross-correspondence. Mrs. Sidgwick[1] had through Mrs. Verrall put the question to him whether he could remember what the last conversation she had had with him before the death of her husband referred to. Professor Sidgwick died in the summer of 1900, Frederic Myers half a year later. The conversation had had reference to matters of great interest for the widow, but hardly of so much importance for Myers, who was then drawing near to the end of his own life. Besides, they had had more than one conversation, and there was no reason for his remembering, after the lapse of six years, what they had spoken of in this particular case. At any rate, the Piper-Myers committed several mistakes, though by-and-bye he recollected many things. At one time he thought it possible that they had discussed a library matter, probably the library of Edmund Gurney. It was at this point that he alluded to Mrs. Verrall's script in a manner that is more interesting than the question whether or no he had in 1900 talked with Mrs. Sidgwick about a library. On February 11th, 1907, the following conversation took place between him and Mr. Piddington:

"*Mr. P.* You will remember that at our last meeting you said that one of the subjects of the conversation between you and Mrs. Sidgwick was connected with a library.

[1] See her paper, "An Incident in Mrs. Piper's Trance," *Proceedings* S.P.R., Vol. XXII., pp. 417—40; and *ibidem*, pp. 46—59.

"*M.* Yes as I recall.

"*Mr. P.* Well, the day after our last meeting here Mrs. Verrall wrote a message and in it there was a reference to a library. There was no obvious connection between what Mrs. Verrall wrote and what you said except for the bare mention of a library. Still it seems possible to me that you tried to repeat through Mrs. Verrall what you had already said here.

"*M.* This is quite true. Did I not tell you that I would go to Mrs. Verrall ? ——

"*Mr. P.* Yes. —— I want you to tell me if you can how your message came out.

"*M.* Just how much she understood I am not sure, but what I do wish her to understand is that during my conversation with Mrs. S. the library was referred to as an important transaction —— What I said to her was, write for Mrs. Sidgwick that we talked about library.

"*Mr. P.* That is exactly what I wanted to get at. But as a matter of fact there is no reference to Mrs. Sidgwick in what Mrs. Verrall wrote ; only a quite disconnected reference to a library.

"*M.* What a pity —— I persistently repeated the word to her, also my own name and Mrs. Sidgwick's."

The interesting point is this that the script which Mr. Piddington had in mind was not at all the one which Myers spoke about. Mrs. Verrall had on February 6th produced a script mentioned above and containing the cross-correspondence *Laurel Wreath*.[1] It began with *Laura,* but afterwards passed on to other things, among them "The great Library has already gone before. Hugh Le Despenser," after which it went on with "Apollo's laurel bough," etc. It was this script with its "quite disconnected reference to a library" which Mr. Piddington referred to ; and he himself points out that the above passage is no doubt partly due to the circumstance that Mrs. Verrall had recently heard that Lord Spencer would retire as Chancellor of the University in Manchester ; "the great library" alludes to the Althorp Library in Manchester, and "Hugh Le Despenser" to Lord Spencer. So there would have been almost nothing evidential about the case if it were this

[1] See above, p. 280.

script that represented Myers's attempt to produce "library"; moreover, it was Mr. Piddington who mentioned it to him, and not the reverse. But, on February 4th, Mrs. Verrall had written another script which Mr. Piddington had wholly forgotten, though he had seen it immediately after its production. With this script the description by Myers corresponds. It ran as follows:

"On the Council I asked and she said Yes. Tell Mrs. Sidgwick that. And something about the Gurney library which I think she will remember or a Gurney memorial which she was to take over —— The signature might help. H. Sidgwick. We have tried for that to day, wait for their answer. F. W. H. M."

Though evidently interspersed with subconscious fabrication, it contains all that Myers had assured at the sitting on February 11th. After this sitting Mr. Piddington, who had been much struck with the way in which the communicator "stuck to his point," looked again at the recent pieces of script sent him by Mrs. Verrall. At the next meeting he was able to tell Myers that he had been right in every point. "You *did* mention Mrs. Sidgwick's name, you *did* mention a library, and you *did* sign the message with your name," he said, and Myers replied: "I did certainly, and am very pleased to hear that she fully registered the thoughts which I indubitably gave her."

Of course it may here, as elsewhere, be urged that the entranced medium has had a supernormal knowledge of Mrs. Verrall's script, which she utilized in her usual dramatic manner.

. . . . . .

The longest and most remarkable among the experiments with Mrs. Piper is the one called *The Latin message*, which has been alluded to above.[1] It became remarkable for quite a special reason, namely in consequence of the misunderstandings it occasioned between the experi-

[1] See p. 276 and p. 301.

menters and the communicator, and there is doubtless much to learn from the manner in which the latter bore himself under these circumstances.

The researchers were, as we know, inclined to think that it was Myers who had invented the cross-correspondences, nay, that he had devised the plan of making them complementary in order to exclude the explanation telepathy between the living. To test this theory it was determined to ask the Piper-Myers to arrange a cross-correspondence of the following type : to two automatists should be given two different messages, between which no connection was discernible, and then as soon as possible to a third automatist a third message, which would reveal the hidden connection. To obtain the more security for the success being eventually due to Myers and not to Mrs. Piper, the request was translated into Latin, and moreover into an intricate and difficult language. The message, as it was called, was dictated to the Piper-personalities in small portions in several sittings, and it appeared to be a laborious task for them to get hold of it through an intermediary like Rector, whose ignorance of Latin was often accentuated. On January 2nd, 1907, the whole of it had been transmitted, but in February they still had only attained to a vague conception of the meaning of the first lines.

How hard it was for them to grasp the Latin words is illustrated by the following episode. Mr. Piddington had at a sitting read aloud a piece of the message to Hodgson, who acted as Myers's helper. Hodgson asked for a repetition of " the next to the last word," which was *jamdudum*. Mr. Piddington now told him that the first syllable was " spelt like the English word *jam*—preserves." " Oh yes, I understand, Marmalade," Hodgson exclaimed ; " that has been the most difficult word for him to understand." More was not said about it ; but *jamdudum* was rightly translated " long since " when Myers shortly afterwards tried to give a version of the beginning of the message. Thus one cannot deny the possibility of the

request being understood if all of its words had been caught clearly.

Mr. Piddington's ardour, however, did not allow him to await this possible result. Something had occurred which had impressed him strongly, and made him suspect that Myers had already comprehended the message.

On February 11th the following conversation had taken place at the Piper-sitting :

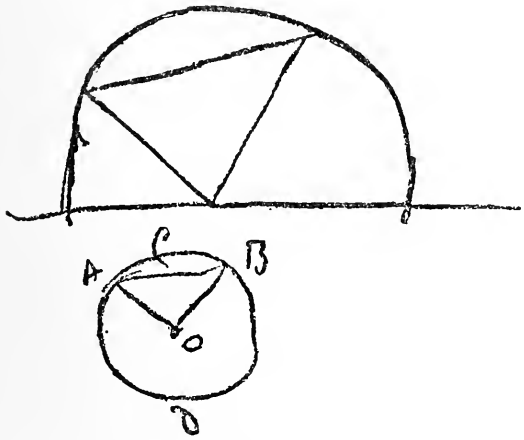
" *M.* Did she [Mrs. Verrall] receive the word Evangelical ?
" *Mr. P.* I don't know, but I will inquire.
" *M.* I referred also to Browning again.
" *Mr. P.* Do you remember what your exact reference to Browning was ?
" *M.* Yes. I referred to Hope and Browning. I also said Star."

It turned out later that Rector, who evidently had no knowledge of Browning, must have been very unfortunate in transmitting the principal words on this occasion. " Evangelical " proved to be a mistake for Evelyn ; it was Browning's poems *Evelyn Hope* and *My Star* which Myers claimed to have given to Mrs. Verrall. But of course it was impossible for Mr. Piddington to guess this. On looking through Mrs. Verrall's recent scripts, he found one from January 28th that contained the words *Aster* [star] and *hope*, besides divers quotations from Browning ; so he assured Myers that " the message he said he gave to Mrs. Verrall about Browning, Star and Hope " had come out clearly. Myers thus had every reason to believe that this attempt at a cross-correspondence was a decisive success.

But Mr. Piddington had, on reading Mrs. Verrall's script of January 28th, been struck by an idea which made him consider Myers's " Hope Star Browning " much more than an ordinary cross-correspondence. Mrs. Verrall's script *in extenso* runs as follows :

" *Aster* [star]
" τέρας [wonder or sign]
" The world's wonder
" And all a wonder and a wild desire —
" The very wings of her
" A WINGED DESIRE

" ὑπόπτερος ἔρως [winged love]
" Then there is Blake
" and mocked my loss of liberty.
" But it is all the same thing—the winged desire
" ἔρως ποθεινός [passion] the hope that leaves
" the earth for the sky—Abt Vogler for earth
" too hard that found itself or lost itself—in the sky.
" That is what I want
" On the earth the broken sounds
threads
" In the sky the perfect arc
" The C major of this life
" But your recollection is at fault."



" A D B is the part that unseen completes the arc."

The first quotation, " And all a wonder and a wild desire," comes from Browning's *The Ring and the Book ;* the later quotations are from his poem *Abt Vogler.* Correctly it ought to be : " The *passion* that left the ground to lose itself in the sky," and " On the earth the broken arcs ; in the heaven a perfect round."

But it was some other lines from *Abt Vogler* that gave birth to Mr. Piddington's idea. In Stanza VII. is the passage :

" I know not if save in this [*i.e.*, music] such gift be allowed to man,
That out of three sounds he frame not a fourth sound, but a star."

The three sounds that form a star he conceived to be an ingenious symbol of the co-operation of three mediums which in the Latin message he had asked Myers to bring about. The mention of "Hope Star Browning," then, through Mrs. Piper, he took to refer to *Abt Vogler*, and the quotation from this poem, through Mrs. Verrall, to indicate his comprehension of the message. To be sure, it was not the actual verse that Mrs. Verrall had quoted. Neither did the utterances in the Piper-trance suggest that Myers had at that time grasped the Latin. But Mr. Piddington was, to use his own expression, too "obsessed" by his idea to catch sight of its deficiencies.

It was under these circumstances that Myers should deliver his reply to the message. The first sentence of this was the following:

"Diversis internuntiis quod invicem inter se respondentia jamdudum committis, id nec fallit nos consilium, et vehementer probamus [As to the fact that you have for a long time been entrusting to different intermediaries things which correspond mutually between themselves, we have not failed to notice it, and cordially approve it]."

On February 20th Myers said to Mr. Piddington: "The idea I got was that I should be a messenger and hand through coherent messages to you." At the next sitting a week later, he said:

"I felt a little perturbed over your message to me when you said I [failed ?] in replying sufficiently to convince you —— What you said [was this] Although you as intermediary have long since united mutually ideas, you have or do not reply or respond sufficiently to our questions as to convince us of your existence etc."

It will be seen that Myers endeavoured to translate the Latin; he knew only the beginning of the message, and was therefore ignorant of what was really demanded of him. But he had misheard the word *internuntiis* as *internuntius*, and so made it the subject of the sentence. He believed it was himself it applied to—that he himself was called an intermediary, as the one who had given "things which correspond mutually between themselves."

He appears to have been glad to be characterized as a messenger; at least Rector, on December 31st, 1906, said that he had been delighted with the message, as far as he had been able to receive it. As for the rest of the Latin, he at any rate displayed more knowledge than it seems possible to ascribe to Mrs. Piper. Only the conception that the message contained a criticism on himself must be due to a strange misunderstanding (of *fallit?*), if it were not a conclusion drawn from the word "although," by which he translated *quod*. Something, he may have argued, must be wrong with his exertions, as Mr. Piddington said: "*Although* you have long since," etc. Later he expressed the same thought in a somewhat altered manner: "you have long since been *trying* to assimilate ideas," he says, when after the close of the experiment he attempted to reproduce the message for Sir Oliver Lodge.

The mistake that the message contained a censure was, however, destined to influence the experiment greatly. It led Myers to mention a few of his performances, and among them Browning's poems *Evelyn Hope* and *My Star*. The import of this will appear from an extract of the conversation held on February 27th:

"*M.* Now I believe that since you sent this message to me I have sufficiently replied to your various questions to convince the ordinary scientific mind that I am at least a fragment of the once incarnate individual whom you called Myers. ——

"*Mr. P.* You say you have replied. Tell me in what messages your reply is given.

"*M.* In my messages reported here and through Mrs. Verrall. The poems, the Halcyon days, Evangelic ——

"*Mr. P.* Tell me what poems.

"*M.* Chiefly Browning's lines given through Mrs. Verrall.

"*Mr. P.* Thank you very much. I think you are making it clear; but I want you to make it completely clear. I think if you can get through a clear and complete answer to my Latin message you will have forged a new and strong link in the claim of evidence for survival of bodily death.

"*M.* I understood that you asked me to reply referring to my utterances through Mrs. Verrall.

"*Mr. P.* Now I think you have done enough for to-day in the matter of replying to the Latin message."

Myers then asked for the last sentence of the Latin to be repeated, which was done. Afterwards the conversation went on as follows :

"*Mr. P.* I want to say that you have, I believe, given an answer worthy of your intelligence—not to-day, I mean, but some time back—but the interpretation must not be mine. *You* must explain your answer at this light.
"*M.* Yes.
"*Mr. P.* You could do it in two words.
"*M.* Yes, I understand.
"*Mr. P.* Well ?
"*M.* Hope Star.
"*Mr. P.* Well ? Yes ?
"*M.* Browning.
"*Mr. P.* Exactly. It couldn't be better.
"*M.* That is my answer.
"*Mr. P.* I can't thank you enough. That is what I have been waiting for.
"*M.* Well what I wished was to translate the whole message for you into English ——
"*Mr. P.* Translate into English certainly, if you like. —— In telling me that 'Browning, Hope and a Star' contains your answer to the Latin message you have given an answer which to me is both intelligible and clear ; but still I should like you to bring out one more point still, so as to leave no doubt in any one's mind of your meaning.
"*M.* My Star. Evely . . . I am too [weak] to tell it to-day. My thoughts wander . . ."

It is clear that Myers and Mr. Piddington had talked about quite different things. Myers did not intend to say that he had answered the Latin message, but mentioned his replies to Mr. Piddington's *various questions*, and the cross-correspondences between Mrs. Piper and Mrs. Verrall, as performances that were not quite despicable. When in the midst of this Mr. Piddington reverted to the Latin message, he did not comprehend why the conversation had been turned that way, but said with some astonishment : "I understood that you asked me to reply, referring to my utterances through Mrs. Verrall," *i.e.*, to the cross-correspondences. And beginning now to suspect that Mr. Piddington had spoken of something other than he had himself done, he asked for a repetition

of the last sentence of the message. Afterwards Mr. Piddington praised him for the reply already given, but begged him to explain it through Mrs. Piper. Unable to comprehend him, Myers tried to escape with a vague "Yes," but Mr. Piddington continued: "You could do it in two words." It was fatal, but hardly to be wondered at, that Myers believed that Mr. Piddington had in mind the two words of the cross-correspondence which had recently been spoken of as a great success—*Hope* and *Star*. Evidently he did not understand his enthusiasm on receiving them, and was quite at a loss when asked to "bring out one more point." He made a feeble attempt to explain, faltering out at last the real titles of the two poems, and left the matter there for the time being.

Very dramatic is the next sitting, on March 6th, where George Pelham, who had together with Hodgson acted all the time as Myers's assistant, but mostly behind the scenes, appeared and tried to unravel the misunderstandings. He did not succeed with regard to Mr. Piddington, but for the reader the following conversation is instructive:

"*G. P.* Did he [Myers] tell you about My Star?
"*Mr. P.* He did. Can you explain about My Star?
"*G. P.* Yes it was a poem he had on his mind of Browning's.
"*Mr. P.* And why had he this poem on his mind?
"*G. P.* He said because it was one of his test experiments with a lady in the body to whom he refers as V. He also had another: Evelyn—Evelyn Hope.
"*Mr. P.* Is that the explanation of the word which came out as 'Evangelical'?
"*G. P.* *Yes.* It was very stupid of Rector I must say as Hodgson and Myers both kept repeating it over and over again to him. I understand your Latin message very well.
"*Mr. P.* Well, will you show me that you understand it?
"*G. P.* Yes certainly. You said in order to convince you he should repeat a message not only through this lady Mrs. V. but it should be reproduced *here* ——"

George Pelham's utterings are just as clear in themselves as they are erroneous with regard to the contents of the Latin message; but he was considerably less sure

when after some explanations on the part of Mr. Piddington he left the scene. His remarks, however, teach us how the Piper-personalities at this time apprehended the message. In reality, the opinion expressed by G. P. was the only natural one after the sitting on February 27th, where Mr. Piddington had incessantly asked Myers to repeat something that had appeared in Mrs. Verrall's script. How was it, after this, possible to doubt that the Latin did refer to some new cross-correspondence? The more because the communicators had conceived the idea that their former achievements were thought to be unsatisfactory.

From this point there was not any question of the real contents of the Latin message, but only of the title of the Browning poem which Mrs. Verrall had quoted in her script of January 28th. Myers had comprehended that this was what Mr. Piddington demanded, and the latter formulated his demand very clearly in a note which was read to Myers on April 2nd by the new experimenter in charge, Mrs. Sidgwick: "You promised to try to tell us what particular poem of Browning's you meant to refer to by the words Browning, Hope and Star."

There are several things that indicate that Myers had a certain knowledge of Mrs. Verrall's *Abt Vogler* script. For instance, he referred in a connection as if he endeavoured to recall it, at the first sitting after February 27th, to the circle and the triangle which are found there. And from the very first he appeared to know that its subject was *survival*—that "Hope" meant hope of a life after death. This was quite another conception than that which had suggested itself to Mr. Piddington after he had read the script. But it was in fact the right one. If an external agent had a share in it, his object must have been to impress the idea of another world on the automatist. It is already this thought that underlies the "winged desire"; but it appears to have fought with other thoughts in Mrs. Verrall's mind. "Winged" has led her to write "winged Eros," and Eros again

leads, as Mr. Piddington points out, to the meaningless interpolation : " Then there is Blake and mocked my loss of liberty " ; the quotation comes from Blake's *Prince of Love*, who " mocks at the lover's loss of liberty." But she reverts to that which is " all the same thing " : the hope that leaves the earth for the sky, the unseen arc. It is for the sake of these thoughts that Browning is quoted.

Furthermore, it would by no means be unnatural if the Latin message had filled Myers's mind with recollections of words and lines from Browning that speak of earth and heaven and the intercourse between them, seeing that it had made him realize his own position as an intermediary between two worlds. But even if he had attempted to impress them upon Mrs. Verrall, this, of course, is quite another thing than if he had intended to answer the message by means of them, and there was no reason why they should have remained in his memory, as they must have done in the latter case. On the other hand, he could not know how far Mrs. Verrall caught his thoughts ; " just how much she understood I am not sure," he says in the *Library* case, and later : " I am glad she registered the thoughts I indubitably gave her." For one reason and another his conception of her script must be vague. Besides, the incident was many weeks old now, and the interval had been filled with cross-correspondences and experiments in great abundance.

Such being the case, it would agree with the situation if Myers must ponder somewhat over the matter before he named a poem—and if he were mistaken. And this was just what happened. On April 8th he reluctantly told Mrs. Sidgwick that the poem he had " specially thought of " was *La Saisiaz*. But this mistake is very important. This long poem by Browning has for its sole subject the possibility of a future life, ending with a vision of *Hope*, whose arrow pierces the cloud of doubt. If the trance-personality had not so much remembered it, as *devised* that it might be this poem that had appeared

in Mrs. Verrall's script, he must not only have known the tendency of her Browning quotations, but must withal be very familiar with that poet. He could obtain it by mind-reading as little as by clairvoyance, as it was neither found in the thoughts of the experimenters nor in the script of Mrs. Verrall.

Myers, however, was far from being sure of having found the right poem, and of course Mrs. Sidgwick's surprise at the mention of it must add to his doubts. At the following sitting it became evident that he had abandoned *La Saisiaz*, and the next time he named the right one—*Abt Vogler*.

His joy and triumph after he had succeeded in getting through the difficult and, to Rector, incomprehensible German name seem in fact to indicate that he now felt sure of having found the right poem. His assurance was like that of a person who remembers, and not of one who guesses. And with a deep emotion he explained what just this poem meant to him, adding : " The thing which impressed me most was the lines beyond the grave." He would have said more, but, as implied by Rector and confirmed at a later sitting, some words were left out here by mistake. It turned out afterwards that he had had in mind the lines about the return of the dead from *Abt Vogler*, Stanza V. :

> " The wonderful Dead who have passed through the body and gone
> But were back once more to breathe in an old world worth their new."

Thus it is evident that *Abt Vogler's* significance to him was the same as that of *La Saisiaz*. It was a poem that touched on the problem of a future life. For this reason had he—if it were he—mentioned it through Mrs. Verrall ; for this reason he at any rate was now sure of its being the poem that expressed what was for him the meaning of the Latin message—that he should be a messenger to the living from the dead. Afterwards, as Rector says, he tried " to explain a little about the poem," speaking

of the resemblance between his own experience and Abt Vogler's "doubts and fears, then his acceptance of God and faith in Him." But Mrs. Sidgwick had expected a wholly different explanation of his choice of *Abt Vogler*. To her his speech was quite irrelevant as long as he did not mention the line about the three sounds. But she must wait a long time for that. That Myers considered his answer satisfactory may be seen from the conversations at the close of the sitting on April 24th and at the next two :

"*M.* Now can I do more to help you than give other messages ?

"*Mrs. S.* I should like you to say exactly why that poem was so appropriate as an answer to the Latin message.

"*M.* Because of the appropriate conditions mentioned in it which applied to my own life ; and nothing I could think of so completely answered it to my mind as those special words."

Mrs. Sidgwick got no other reply that time. But Myers did not forget that at the end of the sitting she had seemed less content than when he had first mentioned *Abt Vogler*. So when he met her again, he himself introduced the subject :

"*M.* I am anxious to-day to clear one or two things. Do you remember my reference to the poem ? Did you wish to ask anything more ? Do you remember when I said I had passed through my body and returned ? I tried to give it clearly, but was not sure you understood.

"*Mrs. S.* Do you mean you gave the name of the poem ?

"*M.* Oh yes. I mean I tried to give another part also which referred to completed happiness in this life and the possibility of returning to the old world again to prove the truth of survival of bodily death."

All that the message had meant to him is given in this single sentence. But he felt the want of sympathy, and said urgently :

"*M.* Mrs. Sidgwick, dear old friend, do you hear me at all ?

"*Mrs. S.* Yes I hear —— and I think that I shall understand.

"*M.* I believe you will when I tell you I have returned to breathe in the old world which is not however better than our new."

This time he had succeeded in getting the important lines through, and no lack of enthusiasm on the part of the experimenters could make him doubt the sufficiency of this response. At the next meeting it was not he who reverted to the message. Nay, he had even ceased to think of it, and was unprepared to return to it. He had spoken about another question, and occasioned by a passing remark Mrs. Sidgwick's mention of it:

"*M.* And the Latin [message] I have previously answered through both lights sufficiently for you to understand that I have really answered at last.

"*Mrs. S.* The Latin message, as you know, refers to cross-correspondences, but also to something more, and there is a line in *Abt Vogler* which we think you had in mind as describing that something more.

"*M.* Did you say line? [of the] poem? I remember the message as referring to my giving proofs of survival of bodily death through cross correspondence messages —— I could not help thinking of Browning —— "

Only after a time was he able to repeat his former reply —that the point where the poem suggested itself to him was this: "Those who passed beyond do return, those beyond mortal vision." In return it is here confirmed that this was what he wanted to add when he immediately after his first mention of *Abt Vogler* said that the thing which impressed him most was the lines "beyond the grave." This time, however, Myers had understood that he had not achieved all that was wanted of him. And there was in fact one thing which in his eagerness to explain his choice of *Abt Vogler* he had in the later sittings quite lost sight of: the star. Of course it had been clear to him that the Hope-Star poem must in some way be connected with stars. At the first sittings by Mrs. Sidgwick he had said that the poem referred to "life after death and stars." *La Saisiaz* he had among other things described as a "poem which Browning wrote to a friend about star and

hope," where "star" is wholly misplaced. Even into *Abt Vogler* he had introduced the star, talking about "his questioning and the answer through his seeing a star," a mistake which is no doubt due to the idea of a star being indispensable in "the poem." At the same time, however, the star had had another significance for him. But to understand this it is necessary to go back some months.

At a Piper-sitting on January 16th, 1907, Mr. Piddington had proposed that Myers should mark his cross-correspondences with some sign, "say a triangle within a circle." Myers's reply had shown that he understood his meaning: "You wish me to make a sign when giving a word at Mrs. Verrall's also at Mrs. Holland's, the same sign." On January 28th, as seen above, a triangle within a circle had been drawn beneath the script of Mrs. Verrall. It is true that it was used to illustrate the quotation from *Abt Vogler* about the perfect arc, but it may on the part of Myers have been a result of Mr. Piddington's suggestion, or may have served two ends; at any rate Myers when on March 6th he told the experimenter that he had endeavoured to draw it, interposed the remark, "As you suggested." There are, however, several tokens of his having preferred to use another sign, *viz.*, a star. And though he first mentioned the circle in connection with Mrs. Verrall's script of January 28th, he seems afterwards to have thought that he had marked it with a star. When on alluding to *La Saisiaz* he wanted to explain that he spoke about the poem in Mrs. Verrall's script, he said first: "I made a circle," but immediately added: "I then drew or tried to draw a star." In fact on that occasion no star was drawn, but only the word *aster* written; but Mrs. Sidgwick confounded it with another script and replied: "Yes, there was a star drawn." From thence Myers unhesitatingly connects the star with the script of "the poem"; on April 24th, immediately preceding his efforts to give the name *Abt Vogler*, a star was drawn, and he exclaimed: "I remembered

Vol [Vogler] as it came to my memory." But it was as the *sign* that the star made him recollect the poem. When he quoted from it, it was other thoughts that filled his mind.

Seen on this background, the sequel becomes clear. From April 24th till May 6th, Myers had repeatedly vindicated his choice of *Abt Vogler*. But Mrs. Sidgwick had not been satisfied with his quotations ; she had asked for a *line* which was not among them. He then remembered the star, which of course must not be absent from the Hope-Star poem. And he succeeded in recalling a line about a star. It was not among those which had impressed him specially ; indeed his recollection of it was faint. But its significance, he believed, lay in its referring to the sign. So at the very next sitting, on May 7th, a star was drawn, and with some difficulty, and alluding to another line of *Abt Vogler*, he wrote the following :

" In my passion to reach you as clear as the sky I quote : if instead of a fourth [sound] framed a star—came a star. And to make it clearer I drew a star. This completes my answer to the Latin message, if you have received all my words clearly. In my passion to reach you clearly I have made Rector try to draw a star for me so there can be *no mistake*. When I quoted to Mrs. Verrall I drew the star so as to make it *clearer* and I wished Rector to reproduce it in connection with the words in the line."

Thus at last Myers had completed his answer. That he conceived the meaning of the star as he did was only natural ; it ought to be drawn by two mediums " so there could be no mistake." That at the same time a line about a star ought to be quoted was certainly a strange device. But as the experimenters with great urgency demanded *a line*, and Myers of course could not suspect the real reason for this demand, it was very sensible on his part to conjecture that it must refer to the sign. When on a later occasion he wanted to explain the experiment to Sir Oliver Lodge, he must no doubt have felt that this was not done easily. But at this point he

had received so many assurances of his success that he could not doubt that it was all right. Though with some difficulty, he succeeded in fact in presenting a short review of its last stages regarded from his own point of view. What preceded the moment when he understood that it was a question of reproducing something which had appeared in Mrs. Verrall's script, he must give up explaining. What he said was the following :

" Remember when Piddington gave me his message the special point in it was for me to give definite proof through both lights. The first thought I had was to repeat a few words or lines of Browning's poem, but in order to make it still more definite I registered a star, and the lines I quoted to you before [*i.e.*, ' Instead of a fourth sound came a star '] were the most appropriate I could find."

" To repeat or give more words of Browning's poem," he had in his last conversation with Mr. Piddington, on March 13th, understood to be the task before him. Ever since he had tried to do this. With the words from *Abt Vogler* about the returning dead he had believed himself to have performed his task. Perceiving that more was wanted, he had drawn the star and quoted " the line "—not knowing what it meant to Mr. Piddington, and not having thought of it before. As may be seen, his recollection of it was imperfect to the last.

The experimenters looked upon the reference to *Abt Vogler* and the quotation of the line about the three sounds as a proof of Myers having comprehended the Latin message and shown his comprehension through Mrs. Verrall's script of January 28th. As regards the critics, some explained the quotation by mind-reading, while others were of opinion that the experimenters in charge had given the Piper-Myers sufficient hints to obtain *Abt Vogler* and the line in reply. I on my part cannot subscribe to any of these contentions. I am inclined to think that the Piper-personalities never displayed a greater independence or a clearer intelligence

than when they made their way out of the confusion which Mr. Piddington's idea had wrought.[1]

. . . . . .

Mr. Dorr's experiments were no more than those of Mr. Piddington confined to cross-correspondences alone. He had conceived the good plan of reading aloud to the Piper-personalities, especially to Myers, divers classic things in English translation, fragments from Myers's autobiography, and the like, with the intention of observing how they would react upon it. This mode of proceeding produced many interesting results, though it perhaps, as accentuated by Mrs. Verrall, who reports some of the experiments, suffered from several faults—too many topics being presented at a time, etc. As in the case of Mr. Piddington, the trance-personalities must often ask the experimenter not to overwork them. It is fair to state this, as the performances of course required the greater intelligence—whether that of Mrs. Piper or of the alleged communicators—the more severe the conditions were.

There cannot here be a question of reviewing many of the experiments, and it is no easy matter to decide which ones ought to be preferred. I choose a few of the most simple where Myers is the communicator. Often both he and Hodgson appeared to be present, at other times only one of them. It is interesting to see that while Mr. Dorr might forget which of them had been his interlocutor, the communicators themselves were never mistaken as to what they had taken part in. On May 8th, Mr. Dorr had read some lines aloud to Hodgson, and mentioned them on May 12th to Myers. "Did you recite it to me before, friend?" asked the latter. "If so, I did not fully understand." The dramatic form is as usual right at Mrs. Piper's.

One of the cases in which Myers displayed the greatest

[1] For further particulars about this incident see my paper, "The Latin Message Experiment," *Proceedings* S.P.R., Vol. XXVI., pp. 147—170.

classical erudition is doubtless the following. At the sitting on March 12th, 1908, Mr. Dorr read aloud the first ten lines from Dryden's version of the *Æneid*. The last of them run as follows :

" For what offence the queen of Heaven began
To prosecute so brave, so just a man ;
Involved his anxious life in endless cares,
Exposed to wants, and hurried into wars."

When Mr. Dorr had read these lines Myers interposed :

" Is there such anger in celestial minds ?
A hero for piety renowned—should suffer and toil."

The first sentence translates the line that was to come (verse 11), *tantæne animis cælestibus iræ*, which Dryden renders, " Can heavenly minds such high resentment show ? " but which Mr. Dorr had not yet read aloud. The ensuing sentence is a perfectly accurate rendering of the immediately preceding lines (*Æneid* v. 9—10), which are given a little more freely by Dryden. " It is certain," Mrs. Verrall writes, " that a Virgilian scholar, hearing a translation of *insignem pietate virum tot adire labores impulerit*, would expect the words *tantæne animis cælestibus iræ ;* and it is a remarkable proof of familiarity with the opening lines of the first *Æneid* to combine phrases which translate both what has, and what has not, been read in Dryden's version." It can hardly be denied that she is right in this.

A small, but interesting proof of a thoroughgoing literary culture is the following. At the sitting on April 22nd, 1908, Mr. Dorr read to Myers ten lines from Shelley's translation of *The Cyclops* of Euripides, purposely so chosen that they neither contained names nor any other thing that might serve as a clue :

" *Mr. D.* ' One with eyes the fairest
Cometh from his dwelling,
Some one loves thee, rarest,
Bright beyond my telling.
In thy grace thou shinest
Like some nymph divinest

In her caverns dewy :—
All delights pursue thee,
Soon pied flowers, sweet-breathing,
Shall thy head be wreathing.'

"*M.* You read well.

"*Mr. D.* Now see if you can tell me whose verses these are. It's a translation from the Greek.

"*M.* Did he write Ode to the Skylark ?

"*Mr. D.* Yes, that is splendid, quite wonderful I think.

"*M.* Thank you. If I am not Myers, who am I ? "

To complete the characterization of the Piper-Myers may finally be adduced an incident from one of Mr. Dorr's first sittings. The latter was reading aloud passages from Frederic Myers's *Fragments of Prose and Poetry*, which is partly an autobiography. Among other things he read :

"From ten to sixteen I lived much in the inward recital of Homer, Æschylus, Lucretius, Horace, and Ovid. It was the life of about the sixth century before Christ, on the isles of the Ægean, which drew me most."

As these words were spoken, Myers wrote :

"A life *incomplete*. Oh ! it is all so *clear*. I recall so well my feelings, my emotions, my joys, my pain and *much* pain. Oh ! I am transported back to Greece. I recall it *all*. I am transported—I remember before my marriage all my imaginations, my pain, my longing, my unrest. I lived it *all* out as few men did. I drank, as Omar K[hay]yam, life and all its joys and griefs. And *never was it complete*. A disappointing —long, dreary longing for a fulfilment of my dreamed of joys. I found it *here* and only *here*. ' Men may come and men may go, but I go on for ever.' [1] I *shall* be delighted to complete my memories of Homer, Horace and Vergil until you are satisfied that I am still one among you, not a fantasy but a reality."

There is perhaps nothing " evidential " in this. But wonderfully well it fits the personality that has been depicted at the Piper-sittings—the wise and gentle scholar, the unpretending and untiring champion of the cause which had filled the life of Frederic Myers.

[1] Tennyson.

SECTION VII

Conclusion. New Mediums

CHAPTER XIX

CONCLUSION

In the preceding sections I have presented as much of the materials gathered by the researchers as seemed sufficient to yield a basis for the judgment of the question which is the subject of this book. It has been my aim to present " the evidence " in such fullness that it might speak for itself. My own words can be few.

What, then, has this evidence told us ? It told us in the first place that Professor *Flournoy* was right when he pictured mediums whose statements originated from their own dream-world, whose non-normal faculties at best consisted in their being able to remember in a trance-condition things that had long ago been obliterated from their waking consciousness, or had perhaps scarcely reached it. It told us in the second place that *Hartmann* was right when he assigned to certain people a super-normal power of perceiving things which were not only distant with regard to space but might also be with regard to time, and which in the latter case might belong not only to the past but even to the future. We found mediums, or automatists, who possessed this power, and we saw that it was, like cryptomnesia, utilized for the fabrication of romances in which their waking consciousness had no share, but considered the products of foreign beings. All this made us ask : Is there, then, no limit to what may be perceived clairvoyantly and fabricated unconsciously ? Is it possible that the whole difference

is, that in the case of those who are only a little mediumistic, or a little entranced, we may trace the cause of their performances, discover the sources of their knowledge, the motives for their fabricating, while in a highly mediumistic and deeply entranced individual like Mrs. Piper we are unable to do this? Is it only a difference in degree? Do all of them on a small scale achieve what Mrs. Piper and similar mediums do on a large one?

Let us remember what Professor Flournoy relates. "There was hardly," he writes, "a prominent or well-known man in Geneva who had departed this life who did not soon afterwards manifest to me through some medium, but invariably these manifestations corresponded to the medium's idea of the deceased persons rather than to my own relations with them." He adduces divers ridiculous instances of the platitudes assigned to the departed. Here, then, pure imagination sufficed to explain the phenomenon; clairvoyance did not play a part. In the same way the great men of the past were re-constructed; Calvin recommended spiritualism in the tritest phrases, and through a medium, too, who was the intelligent authoress of philosophical and moral writings. Finally we ought to recall the most famous among the Genevese mediums, Helen Smith, who composed in trance romances about the conditions on the planet Mars, and for one thing invented for the use of the inhabitants a language that in the most naive manner imitated her own mother-tongue. With good reason, Professor Flournoy's experiments with these mediums resulted in his talking of silliness, childish joy in self-invented comedies, and relapse to a lower stage of development than that occupied by the sensitives in their waking condition.

It is a tremendous leap Professor Flournoy must make when proceeding to speak about Mrs. Piper. The possibility of mind-reading he had beforehand granted. "A good medium," he says, "is able to mirror, or transmit, the unconscious ideas of the sitters." Here already he had by far exceeded the standpoint of his own mediums.

But as regards Mrs. Piper's performances, he saw that it was necessary to go further and to admit "an active and selective telepathy," by the aid of which the medium could choose from the minds of many living—present or absent—the elements from which the images of the dead were reconstructed. Or else, he suggested, the incomplete image of the defunct which one of the sitters had transmitted telepathically to Mrs. Piper might attract to itself other fragmentary images possessed by other persons, and thus give birth to a complete whole. In extension, if not in principle, this does not much differ from clairvoyance. And even so the cases where the sitter does not know the communicator are not taken into account. In fact, there is nothing for it but to grant her clairvoyance, and that a wholly unlimited clairvoyance.

Well, clairvoyance is a fact. I shall not here dwell on its limitations. Possibly the entranced medium possesses it in a higher degree than the waking psychometrists or the semi-waking automatists. That question cannot be decided, as the problem at issue is just whence the entranced medium obtains her knowledge—whether from the discarnate or by means of clairvoyance. For the sake of the argument it is necessary to grant Mrs. Piper this supernormal faculty in the farthest possible dimension.

Mrs. Piper, then, is clairvoyant. There is nothing so distant nor so forgotten that she cannot get hold of it. She does not always get it, but this is not because it is a question of a specially distant or wholly forgotten matter ; it may be quite simple and obvious things she fails in, while more difficult tasks are performed. But having admitted all this, having admitted that her knowledge may be due to clairvoyance, because clairvoyance exists, we proceed to something else—namely to her *utilization* of the material to which she, maybe through clairvoyance, has access.

Her command of it is wonderful, her use of it that of a master. What she makes of it we have seen ; here it can only be hinted at. She creates a figure, Phinuit,

whom she endows with mediumistic powers, with clairvoyance and the faculty of psychometrizing, with medical knowledge and prevision ; a medium, though an imperfect one—as mediums mostly are. Beside him, she creates figures in the likeness of deceased persons. These she does not make mediumistic—they know no more than their human prototypes might be supposed to know. In return, their knowledge is not dim and groping like that of Phinuit, but certain enough within their limited territory, apart from the slips of memory that are natural for human beings.

And she goes further. She creates George Pelham, who also represents an individual who has died, but who lives on in new activity, the old George whom friends and relatives recognize, and yet quite a new George. The same applies to Professor Hyslop's father, Bennie Junot, Hodgson and Myers—in short, to all the prominent portraits in Mrs. Piper's gallery. It is not only a question of attracting, as Professor Flournoy suggested, other people's images of the persons represented ; when Mrs. Piper has subliminally created her figures, they live, talk, and act, not as they have talked and acted in the past, but as they might be conceived to do if they still existed under new conditions. It is no historical novel about bygone times that Mrs. Piper composes on the basis of her mysterious knowledge. The latter is the material of which she may have fabricated her persons ; but her ability does not end here ; she presents them in their relations with the survivors, she shows us their reciprocal relations. Together with the sitters and the researchers, she acts an extemporaneous drama with a never-failing faculty of carrying out the characterization of the countless personalities, and making each of them play just the part claimed by the situation. She even ventures to depict them confused or momentarily incapable of replying to the proffered questions, if the characterization demands it. For this is not a way of covering her own possible lack of knowledge. It is part of the drama that the personalities

differ from each other with regard to clearness and faculty of communicating. If the actual communicator cannot answer what he is asked about, George Pelham may perhaps learn it from him afterwards. Or, on the other hand, what Phinuit could not obtain by psychometrizing, the spirit might tell when he himself appeared. Mrs. Piper draws from an inexhaustible well, and distributes her riches with the eye of a dramatic genius.

She does not flinch at any task. She has created Myers, and she is so little afraid of the consequences that she makes Hodgson ask the experimenters to give him more opportunities to prove his identity; she has access to English literature and classic learning as to all other knowledge, and need not fear to lack material for his figure, the most exquisite she has produced. That she can manage the cross-correspondences, and in a highly intelligent manner make her way out of the mazes of the Latin message experiment, is scarcely more remarkable than the rest.

The question is then whether a person is subliminally capable of all this. We have heard Professor Flournoy's opinion. On reading about his Mlle. X. one is reminded of Mrs. Verrall and the other English automatists. Intelligent, cultivated—nay, in the case of Mrs. Verrall and her daughter, possessed of classical erudition—as they were, their automatic productions might assume a form which might deceive. But, in fact, it became for this reason the more noticeable that their writings were so incoherent and puerile as on a closer examination they most often turned out to be. The automatists themselves had an open eye for these qualities. It required many exhortations to make Mrs. Holland continue her writing, and Mrs. Verrall, who has herself reported her first productions, mentions them in more than one place in a very ironical manner. One faculty certainly seems to distinguish the subconsciousness in preference to the waking man—memory. No doubt it is this phenomenon, cryptomnesia, the faculty of drawing in trance or semi-trance

things from a hidden store which the conscious self ignores, that has contributed the most to assign importance to the automatic productions. It is the same faculty that distinguishes the hypnotized person; it may in this connection be worth noting that a renowned physiologist[1] says that though such a person may remember many details which the waking self has forgotten, the accumulated store of learning is not made use of by him as it is by the unmutilated consciousness of the waking man, and, above all, " the accumulated knowledge of the past is not at the command of the hypnotic self for deliberate judgment, for the determination of conduct and the expression of the will."

. . . . . .

This, then, is how matters stand with regard to the evidence for communication with the dead. Everything depends on the possibility of Mrs. Piper's automatic productions being ingenious while those of other people are infantile and foolish. To me it has appeared impossible.

Of course, within the boundary of a single book it has been infeasible to draw any but the roughest outlines of the reply to the question. Above all, it must be accentuated that there has not been any question of explaining the phenomena, but only of their classification. It ought however to be emphasized, that in spite of all disparity they constitute a unity. Nature makes no bounds. It is only apparently that there is a chasm even between the silliest dream-fabrications and the manifestations through Mrs. Piper. All of them grow in the same soil—the mediumistic state of dissociation, that state where, to use an expression which must only be taken as a symbol, the spirit appears to have more or less completely left the body. The effect of this state may be that there are as in sleep born fancies for which the waking reason is not responsible. But the same state, when the dis-

[1] Morton Prince, *The Dissociation of a Personality*, pp. 86—87.

sociation is more complete or the individual more fit for it, may make it possible for other intelligences to make use of the organism. A small quantity of mediumism produces the former result, a large one the latter. But it is the same principle that underlies both phenomena.[1]

There are a quantity of minor questions which it has been impossible to consider here. One of the most important is the question of the interference of the medium's subconsciousness in those cases where it is not the sole factor. Even in the case of a medium of the type of Mrs. Piper, and as deeply entranced as she is, it seems to play a certain part. When Hodgson[2] once said through her that " every communication must have the human element," he no doubt spoke the truth. Suggestibility and other subliminal qualities appear at times to influence the communicators when they make use of a medium's organism ; in the strangest way they are now and again seen to protrude. Sometimes it is as if the communicators must forcibly suppress a foreign tendency. There might be quoted a number of cases where a communicator is on the point of accepting a suggestion, but in due time succeeds in rejecting it. Thus, Professor James had at a sitting on May 21st, 1906, proposed that Hodgson should undertake Rector's part as intermediary. " Yes," was the answer, " that is a very good suggestion, very good." But immediately after he said : " But he repeats for me very cleverly and he understands the management of the light." And on a later occasion he expressed in the strongest words the necessity of Rector's intervention : " It is Rector who is speaking and he speaks for me. I have no desire to take his place. He understands the conditions better than any individual spirit. When I finished with the conditions in the earthly life I finished with my control over the light."

Another instance of suggestibility presents an incident

[1] Dissociation may withal produce pathological states ; but this does not involve that mediumism is in itself pathological, which is not indicated by anything else.

[2] See above, p. 269.

from the *Horace Ode* case.[1] Myers had not answered Mrs. Verrall's question: "Which ode of Horace entered deeply into your inner life?" But when during the Latin message experiment he had cited the lines from *Abt Vogler* about the dead who return to breathe in the old world, the experimenters, who did not recognize the quotation, thought that it was possibly due to an attempt to answer the former question; the Archytas ode which Mrs. Verrall had in mind alludes to the unsatisfactoriness of our single and short earthly existence. In spite of Myers having, as has been seen above, quoted the lines about the returning dead for quite a different reason, he accepted at the moment Mrs. Sidgwick's suggestion about connecting them with the Horace question. On the next day he tried to retract his answer, and acknowledged that he only remembered the ode "in a sense."

Of the same kind it is when Myers, to Mrs. Sidgwick's question about *Abt Vogler*, "Do you mean that you gave the name of the poem?" replies: "Oh yes. I mean that I tried to give another part also," etc.[2] The communicators are obliging in a somewhat unnatural manner that recalls the forced obedience of the hypnotized person. It is a task of no small import to elucidate how far they are influenced by the subliminal qualities. And in the same way divers problems might be pointed out whose solution must be the next step for those who had attained to the conviction that the principal question was answered.

[1] *Cf.* above, pp. 311—12.
[2] See above, p. 325.

CHAPTER XX

NEW MEDIUMS

It is by means of the manifestations at the Piper-sittings that I have attempted to prove the communication with the dead. Mrs. Piper was for a long time the only medium with whom experiments were conducted in a large number under scientific supervision, and the material collected in this wise is of a copiousness that has not yet been equalled. In later years, however, Professor Hyslop has experimented with other mediums of a similar type, and a series of reports on these experiments has been published in the *Proceedings* of the American Society for Psychical Research.[1]

In itself there is no reason for discussing this material here. But it is interesting to find again through these new mediums "the group," as Myers-Hodgson-Pelham call themselves; with them also Professor Hyslop's father, who has become one of the most ardent collaborators in the work of enlightening humanity about the truth of the survival of bodily death. When Mrs. Chenoweth (pseudonym), who is one of Professor Hyslop's best mediums, presents, for instance, George Pelham to us, it is like meeting a good friend once more. It is precisely the old G. P. who talks, for instance, in the autumn of 1910 with Professor Hyslop about the first attempts at communicating made by Professor William James, who had died in the preceding August and seems to have joined the group immediately:

"*G. P.* James is very particular and anxious to have everything just right. He is improving, we think. Do not you?

"*Prof. H.* Yes, I do.

[1] The extracts below are from Vol. VI.

"*G. P.* When he can push the pad around to suit himself he will be getting pretty near into my class, but not yet. I still hold the pennant and I don't intend to let any emigrant from little Cambridge get in ahead of me. You see there are some of us who still have a streak of human cussedness in us ——"

On another occasion George Pelham reverts to the period when we first became acquainted with him, the time of his earliest manifestations through Mrs. Piper:

"*G. P.* I am always tempted to recall some of my own past every time I return for I never can quite recover from the awful grilling which Hodgson gave me after my most respectable and sudden departure. You are not such a fiend as he was or we would all be in the deep deep sea.

"*Prof. H.* Thank you.

"*G. P.* You get the evidence just the same and we are not so distressed. The sittings with you are so much pleasanter, so much more social. Hodgson says that will do, he wants to hear no more of such soft compliments ——"

Professor Hyslop asserts that the medium had not read the records of the Piper-sittings. But even if she had done so, it would require no small amount of intelligence to produce on the basis thereof the above pieces of characterization.

A new communicator was, besides Professor James, Mr. Frank Podmore. This well known critic of the results of psychical research had, like James, died in August, 1910; he appeared already in the following October through Mrs. Chenoweth, who, being an American, had never heard the name of the English author. Podmore had in his lifetime disputed, not exactly the possibility of a future life, but the probability of getting into communication with the departed. Above all, he had contended that no proof had been produced of it. His method had been that of attacking all weak points in the communications without regard to the totality, and without attempting any attack where the position was strongest. No doubt he did good service by pointing out the weaknesses, and by demanding that all possibilities for a human explanation ought to be faced; but

he generally reckoned only with explanations like fraud, self-deception, cryptomnesia, and at most telepathy. Clairvoyance he was rather unwilling to admit, and to psychometry he does not seem to have paid much attention. That he had not believed in it was affirmed by Miss Johnson in reply to an inquiry by Professor Hyslop.

For those who know Mr. Podmore as an author it is curious to read a conversation that took place in May, 1911, through Mrs. Smead (pseudonym), another medium of Professor Hyslop's, between him and the latter. Podmore had, as stated afterwards by Hodgson, made the acquaintance of a recently deceased lady who in Hodgson's lifetime had had sittings with Mrs. Piper, and who had herself practised psychometry. He had thus been converted into a belief in this phenomenon, a belief which Professor Hyslop did not share. The unwillingness of the latter to accept his opinion made the conversation rather long but at the same time so instructive that I propose to reproduce it with only a few omissions:

"*P.* Different objects do carry their influence, Hyslop, more than you know.

"*Prof. H.* All right, I am glad to hear that.

"*P.* Yes and in some cases it is all from your side. Do you know I wish to convey the meaning [of] Psychometry ?[1]

"*Prof. H.* Yes.

"*P.* Yes. But only when objects are used continually[2] does it come like second nature to the 'Medium.'

"*Prof. H.* I understand.

"*P.* A case of Practice makes perfect. Yes that was how I find it was with some of those I experimented with since I have been here.

"*Prof. H.* Good.

"*P.* All of the earth side. Do you know that ?

"*Prof. H.* No, I do not, but I am glad to hear it.

"*P.* Yes, these workers of whom I speak did much in this way ; believed it was from here but only of the psy[chometry]. Yes, of earth life.——Impressions of ours are left more distinctly on those things we have kept about our person continually. Yes do you not find it so ?

"*Prof. H.* I do not know, unless you mean . . .

"*P.* You get best results as you term it, H., from such.

[1] Here and elsewhere the medium spells "Scicometry."

[2] *I.e.*, by the medium.

But sometimes the owner of it is not present and yet you get information from them.

"*Prof. H.* Can you get little incidents of their lives, that is, of the owners from the objects alone?

"*P.* Not I, but some on your side, H., can. Can you understand me?

"*Prof. H.* Not quite fully because that must be long investigated.

"*P.* *Fact* yes

"*Prof. H.* All right.

"*P.* positively so too. Yes it does not of necessity need be that we are with them to get the earth memories. ——

"*Prof. H.* Do you mean that the associations . . .

"*P.* remain with them.

"*Prof. H.* affect the mind of the . . .

"*P.* Yes yes yes, H., that is it exactly, H., that is why so much is taken for *Spirits* that is not really so.

"*Prof. H.* But . . ."

It was a mistake on the part of Podmore to conclude from Professor Hyslop's utterances, which he himself cut short, that he agreed with him. Professor Hyslop, however, in the sequel set forth his opinion so plainly that the mistake was cleared up:

"*P.* *Psycho*metry stops there. And if you keep the object from their *personal* touch, H., you do not get much. Can you understand my expression?

"*Prof. H.* If you mean that many thoughts from the spirit world are conveyed to the mind of the psychic and then are recalled by association with the objects.

"*P.* *No. No.* I mean that those objects hold for a while the impressions our *Spirits* left with them. ——

"*Prof. H.* Do you mean that thoughts are left on the objects and can . . .

"*P.* Certainly, be picked up, if you please, by the ones having the gift to do so. Not tel[epathy].

"*Prof. H.* I understand that.

"*P.* They, H., could not get them if the objects were not brought into contact with them.

"*Prof. H.* I understand, but it is incredible to me.

"*P.* No, but if you keep the object from their touch and your own, as it has been suggested, we can keep more in touch with our earth friend, as it is then a case of our personality and kept out of reach of the other's touch, the psychic touch, if you like. You know I did not believe in Psy[chometry] having any hold, when there, but when I came to try those I had experimented with I found the new difficulty.

"*Prof. H.* Then would it be better always not to have objects near at hand when experimenting?

"*P.* Not to let the psychic come in touch personally with them. Do you now get my thought?

"*Prof. H.* Yes.

"*P.* If you desire a perfect set of facts and clear ones never let them see or touch them, as they will always get impressions if personal contact exists.

"*Prof. H.* I understand.

"*P.* Keep them as H[odgson] was told to do. I ridiculed the idea when there, but it is true nevertheless. ——

"*Prof. H.* Then you simply read off the object your own . . .

"*P.* life history, yes.

"*Prof. H.* Then it might be difficult to prove spirits at all.

"*P.* If as I said, H., you let the psychic touch them. Can you not understand yet?

"*Prof. H.* Yes —— go on.

"*P.* It is only, H., when no other comes in contact with our earth memories can they be proven as of Personal Identity. Cannot you see that if another comes in contact it takes away the proof?

"*Prof. H.* That may be, but go on ——

"*P.* It was hard for me to believe it.

"*Prof. H.* Yes, and it is hard for me to believe it now, in spite of your statement.

"*P.* Fact just the same.

"*Prof. H.* All right.

"*P.* I never did give in.

"*Prof. H.* No, and I shall have to get much more evidence to make me give in.

"*P.* Try it for yourself with my thoughts in view. See if some of those you experiment with do not find it difficult to get information without personal touch of objects, H."

As may be seen, Podmore's statement on the whole agrees with the results we have previously attained to with regard to "articles." But it is interesting to see that it is he who advocates them, and advocates them just in the way he does. Now he knows that communication is a fact, but he has also become convinced that psychometry is so; and he immediately discerns the possibilities involved in this. He has made himself very familiar with the subject. He knows that it can be useful to bring objects, as it helps the communicators

to keep in touch with the sitters. That was just what the utterances of Rector and others at the Piper-sittings went to show. But the objects must be kept as Hodgson was told to do—they must not come into contact with the medium; the reverse may, even if the deceased owners are present, occasion an intermingling of the psychic's own impressions, and, what is the most important, *it takes away the proof*. How characteristic that this sceptic *par excellence* above all thinks about the proof!

And not only does he want to teach the experimenter how to avert the objectionable influence of the articles; he points out, moreover, that the psychometric faculty of certain mediums may become a means of deciding whether the communications coming through them are genuine or not. "Try yourself and see if some of those you experiment with do not find it difficult to get information without personal touch of objects." This is the difference between those who can only psychometrize and those who are really in communication with the dead; only the latter can procure information without touching the objects.

Professor Flournoy in his book *Spirits and Mediums* expresses half in jest the wish that "Myers or the other spirits—if they really come into play at all—will reveal to us a means of eliminating from mediumistic manifestations the combined action of the subliminal imagination, and of telepathy from the living." If the misleading term telepathy be replaced by the more real notion psychometry, Podmore has in a degree fulfilled this wish. The danger of the sitters themselves being psychometrized no doubt remains, but it is of less consequence, as in that way information may perhaps be obtained about the living, but in a very small measure about the dead. As for the action of imagination, Professor Flournoy has himself indicated the means of discrimination by his accentuation of the inferiority of the subliminal products.

So much for generalities. In the concrete, however,

the difficulties are great. Between a medium like Mrs. Piper and those described by Professor Flournoy there are many grades; nay, even among the apparently genuine communications are interspersed things that do not bear the stamp of genuineness. Beforehand only one thing is certain—that an immense quantity of what believing spiritualists accept as messages from beyond must fall beneath a scientific criticism. On the other hand, there may be danger of overlooking some golden grain in the big heaps of chaff. But worse would it be to call anything gold which was not gold. And however hard it might be for many to see what they believed in weighed and found wanting, the loss might be made up by a more perfect assurance that not everything was false—that through some mediums at least, with regard to some of their performances, the reality was proved of that communication with the dead which tells us that they are living, and that we too shall pass through the gate of death into a new life.

INDEX

ANNE, " Aunt Anne," control, 189

BALTIMORE, Mrs., 79
Bergmann, Miss, 272

CALVIN, control, 3, 12, 334
Carruthers, Eliza, 229, 231, 245–246, 248. —, James, 229; control, 231, 236, 247
Chenoweth (pseudonym), Mrs., 341–342
Clarke, Mr. and Mrs., 197–198
Clarke, Frank, control, 260
Constable, Mr., 85–88
Coventry, Mrs., 25
Curtois, Miss, 93–94

DANDIRAN, Mme., 9–10
" Doctor," control, 223, 226
Döbeln, von, 36–37
Dorr, George B., 271, 288–297, 303–304, 330–332
Dupond, Mme., 4–6

ELDER, David, 249

FAWCETT, Henry, 155. —, Mrs., 155
Feilding, Everard, 130–131, 142–145
Flournoy, Professor, 1–17, 42, 46, 73, 171, 174, 333–337, 346–347
Forbes (pseudonym), Mrs. Diana, 59–85, 89, 121–123, 129, 139–145, 159, 163, 165, 170, 284, 307, 309. —, Mr., 142, 159. —, Talbot, control, 59, 66, 79–81, 83–84, 142–145
Frith, Mrs., 305–308

GONNER, Mrs., 40
Gurney, Edmund, 32, 50, 195, 312, 314; control, 59, 61, 66, 80, 83–84, 104–105, 108, 111–112, 130, 149, 192–195, 221

HART, John (pseudonym), 199–202
Hartmann, Eduard von, 16–31, 41–46, 174, 333
Hodgson, Dr. Richard, 69–72, 95–100, 132, 134–138, 174–175, 177, 179–180, 187–188, 199–200, 202–216, 218–220, 223–234, 236–237, 239–245, 247, 249, 251–267, 270, 272, 276–277, 305, 311; control, 133–138, 175, 267–275, 277, 280–283, 287–299, 304–306, 311, 315, 321, 330, 336–339, 341–346
Holland (pseudonym), Mrs., 101–171, 173–174, 273, 275–278, 286, 290–298, 306–309, 327, 337
Home, Mrs., 308–309
Howard, James, 200–202, 205–207, 210–211, 213–215, 218, 311. —, Miss Katharine, 200. —, Mrs. Mary, 200, 207–209, 211–213, 218
Hyde, Fred, 259
Hyslop, family, 229. —, Anna (Annie), 229; control, 235, 244. —, Charles, 229; control, 230–231, 235, 244–245. —, Professor James, 43, 177, 235–250, 268, 270, 304, 341–345. —, Mrs. Margaret (Maggie), 229, 234, 239, 247–248. —, Mrs. Martha Ann, 229. —, Robert, 229; control, 226–252, 336, 341. —, Robert (jr.), 244

" IMPERATOR," control, 223–226, 243
Irving, Hugh, control, 260–262

JAMES, Professor William, 137, 174, 184, 267, 269–272, 339; control, 341
" Jessie," 134–137
Johnson, Miss Alice, 101–104, 106, 109–112, 114, 117–125, 127–132, 134–138, 141–144, 146, 152–154, 157, 160–161, 163–

169, 296–297, 300–301, 303, 305–310, 343
Junot (pseudonym), family, 250–266. —, Bennie, control, 250–266, 272, 336

Lang, Andrew, 30, 32, 121–122
Leaf, Dr. Walter, 69–70, 173, 181, 184, 188, 197
Leblanc, Mme., 7–8
Lodge, Alfred, 190. —, Fred, Mr. and Mrs., 29. —, Frank, 191. —, Jerry, control, 190–191. —, Miss, 193. —, Sir Oliver, 29, 38, 41, 43, 45, 58, 68, 70–72, 95, 115, 117–119, 178–179, 181–183, 185–186, 188–196, 221–222, 227, 272, 274–277, 279, 300, 319, 328; Lady L., 189, 193. —, Robert, 190–191
Lund, Mr., 196–197. —, Maggie, control, 196–197

Mackensie, Mrs., 40–41
Marsh, Mr., 92
Maxwell, Dr. Joseph, 96, 130, 136, 148
McClellan, James, control, 229. —, Robert, control, 229, 243–244
Miles, Miss Clarissa, 17–27, 31, 42–44, 49, 57, 60, 78, 96, 101, 112, 121, 162, 186
Moses, Staynton, control, 112, 223–225
Münsterberg, Professor Hugo, 135, 137
Myers, Dr. A. T., 50. —, Frederic, 38–39, 41, 48, 61–63, 67–68, 70–72, 75–76, 85–88, 94, 97, 103–104, 114–116, 119, 142, 223, 300–301, 312, 332; control, 48–49, 56, 58–59, 64–72, 76–79, 104–120, 125, 130, 147–152, 171, 269, 274–280, 283–285, 287, 289, 293–296, 298, 301, 305, 308, 310–332, 336–337, 340–341, 346. —, Mrs., 62–63

Newbold, Professor William, 177, 206, 208, 220–223, 267, 269–272
Noel, Roden, 152–154, 161, 166–167

Oliphant, Laurence, 120

Paladino, Eusapia, 130
Peirce, Professor, 203, 207
Pelham (pseudonym), Mr. and Mrs., 205–209, 211. —, Frank, 206. —, George, control, 198–230, 243, 245, 247–249, 252–253, 255, 257, 259–267, 275, 294, 311, 321–322, 336–337, 341–342
Peters, Vout, 33–38, 42, 45–46, 176, 178–179, 181, 185–186
Phinuit (Dr. Jean Ph. Scliville), control, 134, 176–222, 225–227, 235, 272, 335–337
Piddington, Mr., 69–70, 95–96, 130, 134–137, 272, 274–277, 279, 281–283, 285–287, 300–302, 304, 306–310, 312–324, 327–330
Pigou, Professor, 161–163
Piper, Mrs., 14, 95–99, 132, 134–135, 172–177, 179, 185, 187–188, 192, 196, 199–201, 203, 211, 216—221, 225, 228–229, 233, 239, 252–253, 261–262, 267–269, 271, 273–275, 283, 288, 293–294, 296, 298–299, 303–304, 308, 311, 314–315, 319, 330, 334–339, 341–343, 347
Podmore, Frank, 309; control, 342–346
Pope, Miss, 269, 294
Prince, Morton, 338
" Prudens," control, 226, 234, 236

Ramsden, Miss Hermione, 17–27, 31–32, 42–47, 49, 56–57, 60–61, 78, 96, 101, 112, 121, 162, 181, 185, 309
" Rector," control, 96, 222–228, 230, 232, 234–236, 239–241, 243–244, 247–249, 252–253, 256–261, 268, 276–277, 279–280, 284, 287, 315–316, 319, 321, 324, 328, 339, 346
Rich, Dr., control, 195–196, 227–228
Richet, Professor, 131

Sallie, " Aunt Sallie," 220–221, 228
Savage, Minot J., 199–201
Schiff, Professor, 4
Schiller, Dr., 269–270
Schweizer, Mrs., 39
Scliville. *See* Phinuit.
Sidgwick, Professor Henry, 116, 153, 180, 301, 312–314; control, 71, 104, 108, 112, 152, 314. —, Mrs., 39–42, 71, 77, 116–

117, 152, 274, 283–285, 312–314, 322–328, 340
Smead (pseudonym), Mrs., 343
Smith, Helen (pseudonym), 2–3, 9–13, 105, 334
Stella, Mrs., 32–33, 45, 195
Swedenborg, Emanuel, 239–240, 244

Taylor, Colonel, 308
Thompson, Mr. and Mrs., 193, 195–196, 227. —, Isaac, control, 228, 275
Trevelyan, Sir George, 152

Verrall, Dr., 21–22, 48, 50–58, 60–61, 63, 67, 73, 78, 89, 98, 109–112, 121, 137, 149–153, 161–162, 165, 279, 286–288, 299, 311. —, Mrs., 21, 46–105, 109–130, 138–142, 145–171, 173–174, 184, 273, 275–277, 279–291, 294, 297–314, 316–324, 327–331, 337, 340. —, Miss Helen, 95–96, 156–159, 166, 170, 278, 280, 282, 289–291, 294–295, 297–298, 301–309, 337
Vogt, Carl, 4

Walsh (Welsh), John, 261–262

Zora, Mme., 6–8
Zschokke, Heinrich, 28

BRADBURY, AGNEW, & CO. LD., PRINTERS, LONDON AND TONBRIDGE.

UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA LIBRARY
Los Angeles
This book is DUE on the last date stamped below.

DISCHARGE-URL
NOV 2 2 1982
FEB 22 1984
FEB 20 1984
NOV 1 1 1988
MAR 20 1984
REC'D LD-URL
MAY 17 1986
REC'D LD-URL
OCT 03 1988
50m-7,'69(N296s4)—C-120

3 1158 00559 7967

UC SOUTHERN REGIONAL LIBRARY FACILITY
AA 000 505 373 1